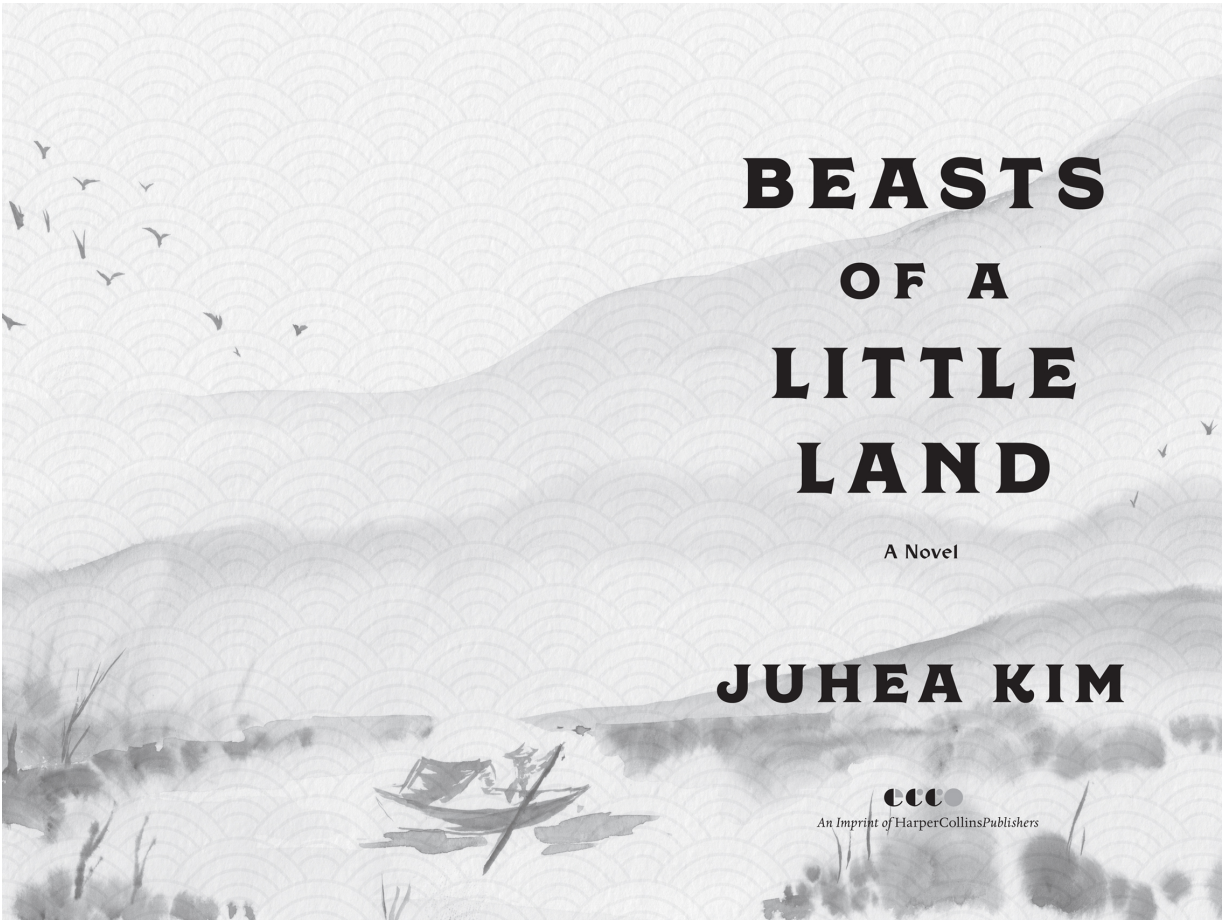


# BEASTS OF A LITTLE LAND

A NOVEL

JU HE A KIM





# **BEASTS OF A LITTLE LAND**

A Novel

**JUHEA KIM**



An Imprint of HarperCollins Publishers

# **Dedication**

For my mother, Inja Kim, and my father, Hackmoo Kim

어머니와 아버지께 드립니다

# Contents

*Cover*

*Title Page*

*Dedication*

Prologue: The Hunter

## Part I

1. Secret Letters
2. Luna
3. Something to Remember When You're Down
4. The Orphan
5. The Friend from Shanghai
6. The Parade
7. The Escape
8. I Have Met the Right Person, at Last
9. The March
10. The Darkest Shade of Blue

## Part II

11. Jungcho Speaks
12. A Marriage Proposal
13. Left and Right
14. Some Men Are Good and Some Men Are Bad
15. Nocturnal Birds
16. Because You Were You, Standing There

17. Café Seahorn
18. Rainy Night
19. Hoarfrost
20. The Dreamers

### Part III

21. Purple Shadows
22. Zoo Animals
23. The Beginning of the End
24. Lingonberries
25. Republic

### Part IV

26. Hourglass
27. The Walk

Epilogue: The Seawoman

*Acknowledgments*

*About the Author*

*Copyright*

*About the Publisher*



## Prologue

# The Hunter

1917

**THE SKY WAS WHITE AND THE EARTH WAS BLACK, LIKE AT THE BEGINNING** of time before the first sunrise. Clouds left their realm and descended so low that they seemed to touch the ground. Giant pines loomed in and out of the ether. Nothing stirred or made a sound.

Hardly distinguishable in this obscure world, a speck of a man was walking alone. A hunter. Crouching over a raw paw print, still soft and almost warm, he sniffed in the direction of his prey. The sharp smell of snow filled his lungs, and he smiled. Soon, a light dusting would make it easier for him to track the animal—a large leopard, he guessed, from the size of the print.

He rose quietly like a shade among the trees. The animals moved without a sound, here in their own domain, but the mountains belonged to him also—or rather, he, like the animals, belonged to the mountains. Not because they were generous or comforting, for nowhere in these woods was safe for man or beast. But he knew how to *be* when he was on a hill, to breathe, walk, think, and kill, just as a leopard knows how to be a leopard.

The ground was mostly covered with red-brown pine needles, and the footprints came few and far between. Instead, he looked for scratchings on tree trunks or places where the thickets were left

almost imperceptibly disturbed, perhaps just a few wispy hairs caught at the ends of a broken branch. He was closing the gap between them, but he still hadn't caught sight of his prey in the past two days. He had long ago run out of his provision, coarse barley balls flavored only with salt. He'd spent the previous night in the split-open trunk of a red pine, looking up at the white sickle moon to keep himself from falling asleep. But his hunger and fatigue made his feet lighter and head clearer, and he decided he would stop moving when he fell dead, but not before then.

There were no killings left behind thus far. Rabbits, deer, and other small beasts were dried up in winter, and it was just as hard for a leopard as it was for people. At some point it would have to stop, and that was how he was going to kill it. They both needed food and rest, but he was determined that he would go on longer than his prey, as long as necessary.

He came upon a glade, a circle of young pines huddling away from a rocky ridge. He walked up to the overhang and looked around the surrounding mountains in their wintry down of charcoal and ash green. The sheets of clouds, blown by the wind, were caught at the throats of hills and billowed like torn silk. Beneath his feet, there was a fall into the wild white abyss. He was glad to have been led to this place. Leopards loved rocky cliffs, and it was more than likely there was a den here.

Something soft and cold gently touched his face. He looked up at the sky and saw the first sprinkling of snow. Now he'd have more footprints to track, but he would also have to find the animal quickly and descend the mountain before the snow thickened. He tightened the grip on his bow.

If his instincts were true, and the leopard was just below him in its den on the side of the cliff, he wouldn't have to struggle to find it any longer. But he would have to wait at that spot until it came wandering out again, which might be in another hour, or three days hence. By then, the snow would go over the top of his head while standing. He would become snow and rock and wind, his insides would feed the leopard and his blood would nourish the young

pinus, so that he may as well have never had a life down below as a human among other humans.

In that life, he'd been a soldier in the Imperial Army, handpicked from the best archers in the country. No one could surpass him with a rifle or a bow. They called him PyongAhn Tiger, after an old saying about the personalities of each province. Of course, there were ferocious beasts in every mountain and forest in the little land that even the ancient Chinese had called the Country of Tigers, but the name suited him more than the farmers from the South. His people were born hunters, who survived where the land was too steep and unforgiving for tilling.

His father had also been a soldier under the PyongYang magistrate. Whenever they skipped paying the army, his father had gone into the mountains. Most often he'd brought back small game—deer, hares, foxes, and pheasants—though sometimes boars, black bears, leopards, and wolves.

When he was a child, his father had killed a tiger by himself, and six of the village's strongest men had to come help him carry the beast down the mountain. The rest of the villagers surrounded them in solidarity while the children ran ahead of the crowd, cheering. A tiger skin was worth more than a soldier's yearly wage. Its massive body was laid to rest in the village square under the ginkgo tree, and somehow the women prepared a feast out of nothing—that was their talent—and everyone drank their fill of the milky rice wine.

But later that night, sitting cross-legged on their hot-stone floor, his father turned grave. Never kill a tiger unless you have to, his father said sternly.

But Father, we are rich now. We'll be able to buy all the rice we need, he said. The stub candle was flickering modestly, without defying the darkness that protected them all like a thick winter quilt. His mother and younger sisters were either sewing or asleep in the other room, and there was only the murmurous sound of owls on their hunt.

His father just looked at him and said, You've been shooting hares and pheasants since you were a child.

Yes, Father.



You can take down a pheasant flying a hundred yards away.

Yes, Father, he said proudly. Already there was no better archer than him in the entire village, except for his father.

You can shoot an arrow into a tree from a hundred and twenty yards away, and shoot another one right on top of it.

Yes, Father.

So do you think you can kill a tiger? his father asked. He wanted to say Yes, and he did think he could. But his father's voice as he asked the question already foretold him that the only right answer was silence.

Show me your bow, his father said. He got up and brought his bow and laid it on the floor between them.

You can't kill a tiger with this bow no matter how good of a marksman you are, his father said. It's not powerful enough at a long distance, and a tiger is no pheasant. This bow can only carry enough force to wound a tiger if you shoot from twenty yards or under. To fatally wound, fifteen yards or less. Do you know how quickly a tiger can cross fifteen yards?

He admitted his ignorance with silence.

A tiger is three yards from nose to the tip of its tail, and can jump over the village tree if it wants to. To a tiger, leaping over this cottage is like skipping over a puddle to you and me.

If you take a shot at the tiger too soon, you'll only injure it lightly and make it more ferocious. Take a shot too late or miss, the tiger will be upon you before you finish blinking your eyes. A tiger can cross fifteen yards in a second.

But, Father, he said. You killed a tiger today.

I told you, kill a tiger if you have no other choice. And that's only when the tiger tries to kill you first. Never go after a tiger otherwise, do you understand?

\* \* \*

**THE HUNTER'S MEMORIES GATHERED SOFTLY** like the snow falling around him. He hid himself behind a rock, facing out toward the ledge. His senses were dulled by the snow, which was swirling into

his eyes and nose and crusting over his bare hands. It was coming down heavier than he'd thought—and from this height, with the clear view of the clouds blowing in from the east, he could see it wouldn't stop. He realized that he should have gone down the mountain the moment he first smelled the snow coming, when he stopped over that wet paw print.

He hated seeing his children staying so still and quiet inside the cottage, drained of the strength to even chatter. He had promised them that he would come back with something to eat. If only he'd caught a deer or a rabbit, he would have gone home to them and seen their small happy faces lit brightly like lanterns. Instead, he found only the leopard's footprint and was tempted by the possibility of its hide, worth more than half of a year's harvest.

Is this the day I die? he wondered. Suddenly he became very tired, losing all tension that had held him upright. Then he imagined that the snow looked like a steaming bowl of white rice, which he'd only eaten less than five times in his entire life. He didn't become angry—he laughed, as if the laughter were just a wind passing through his thin body. He wanted to think a bit more about foods he would've liked to eat before dying, like braised ribs with soy sauce and scallions, and oxtail broth so rich with melted marrow it sticks to the inside of your mouth. He'd had those things once at a holiday feast. But these fantasies were not as strong or seductive as other memories that now overwhelmed him.

When he first saw Sooni, walking arm in arm with her sisters, on her way to collect wormwood and fiddleheads in the valley. She was thirteen, and he was fifteen.

Sooni, wearing a green silk jacket and a red silk skirt, all embroidered with flowers, and a jeweled headdress—the court dress for royal princesses, which the common folk were allowed to wear only once in their lives for their wedding. A marriage was so sacred in the eyes of gods and men that a lowly tenant farmer's daughter, born and raised in undyed white hemp every day of her entire life, was permitted to play the part of the most noble of women just for a day. He himself was dressed in the official court uniform of a minister, a blue robe with a belt and a hat made of black horsehair.

The villagers loudly teased him, How he stares at the bride! He doesn't look like he'll get any sleep tonight. Sooni kept her pretty eyes downcast even while she was walking. Two matrons attended her on either side so she could shuffle slowly under her heavy robes. They faced each other at the altar, took turns offering each other a cup of clear wine, drank from it, and then they were bound to each other forever.

When night fell and they were left alone in their marital chamber, he carefully removed the many silk layers of her princess outfit, which had been worn by every bride in their village for generations. Sooni was shy, unlike her usual cheerful self, and he himself was very nervous. But after he blew the candle out, and caressed her smooth shoulders and kissed her moonlight skin, she wrapped her legs around his waist and raised her hips. He was shocked and grateful that she desired him too. The joy in being one with her was unimaginable. It was the opposite of standing high in the mountains, which had been the most intense happiness he'd known until then. Whereas that was an ecstasy of height, coolness, and solitude, this was an ecstasy of depth, warmth, and union. He wrapped an arm around her and she nestled her head on the nook between his shoulder and chest. Are you happy? he'd asked. I wish we could be like this forever, she'd whispered. But I'm also so happy that I wouldn't have any regrets if I died right now. Like I wouldn't even be mad.

Me too, he'd said. That's exactly how I feel too.

The hunter felt himself fall into a soft, cloudy mound of memories. It was so sweet to let go of his grip on the present and dwell among the shadows of the past. Slipping into death really wasn't so bad—it was rather like passing through a door to a world of dreams. He closed his eyes. He could almost see Sooni gently calling out to him, My husband, my darling, I've been waiting for you. Come home.

Why did you leave me, he said. Do you know how hard it's been for me?

I was always next to you, Sooni said. You and the kids.

I want to go with you, he said, and waited for her to take him away.

Not yet, but soon, she said.

His eyes snapped open as he realized he really was hearing a sound. A soft breathing sound that came from the edge of the cliff, whence an icy fog was emanating like incense. Instinctively he readied his bow, knowing that even if he got his prey, he likely wouldn't make it down the mountain. He just didn't want to end up as a leopard's meal.

He felt, rather than saw, the leopard climb up onto the ledge, its silhouette weaving through the brume. He gasped and lowered his bow when it finally revealed itself, just yards away from him.

It wasn't a leopard at all, but a tigerling.

From nose to the tip of the tail, it was as long as his arms stretched wide apart—just the size of a full-grown leopard. It was too big to be called a cub, though still too young to hunt on its own. The tigerling looked at the hunter with curious eyes, twitching its circles of ears padded with white fur. Its calm yellow irises were neither threatened nor threatening. It had almost certainly never seen a human being before, and looked mildly puzzled by the strange apparition. The hunter gripped his bow tighter. It was, he realized, the first time he'd spotted a tiger within range.

Hunted by the Japanese in every hill and valley, tigers had been driven deep into the wildest mountains. The prices had gone up accordingly for their skin, bone, and even meat, which had never before been the reason they were hunted, but had become a fashionable delicacy on the tables of wealthy Japanese. They believed that eating tiger flesh gave you its valor, and held banquets where officers decked with epaulettes and medals and upper-class ladies in European dresses sat down to taste courses made entirely of tiger parts.

With this kill, he would be able to buy enough food to last three years. Perhaps even a plot of land. His children would be safe.

But the wind howled into his ear, and he lowered his bow and arrow. *Never kill a tiger unless it decides to kill you first.*



He got up to standing, which sent the tigerling scampering backward like a village pup. Before it even disappeared back into the fog, the hunter turned around and started his descent through the thickening snow. Within a span of a few hours, the snow had already gathered halfway up his calf. The hollowness that had made his feet lighter was now dragging him closer to the earth with every step. A gray, colorless dusk was draped over the shivering trees. He started praying to the god of the mountain, I've let go of your attendant creature, please let me make it down.

The blizzard stopped at nightfall. He came halfway down the mountain before his legs buckled and he fell knee first into snow. He was on fours like an animal; when even his elbows gave out he curled into the powder, sparkling white in the moonlight. Then he thought, I should be facing the sky, so he heaved himself over onto his back. The moon was gently smiling down on him: it was the closest thing in nature to mercy.

\* \* \*

**"WE'VE BEEN GOING IN CIRCLES,"** Captain Yamada said. The others around him looked frightened, not just because what he was saying was true, but also because he dared to voice this calamity in the presence of his superior.

"These trees are all growing thicker on this side—so that way must be south. But you see how we have been heading the opposite way for the past hour!" Captain Yamada exclaimed, barely concealing his contempt. At twenty-one, he already had the manner of someone used to giving orders and opinions without once being challenged, which was a habit born out of his highly influential family. The Yamadas were a cadet branch of an ancient samurai clan, and his father, Baron Yamada, was a close friend of Governor-General Hasegawa himself. The Hasegawas and the Yamadas both hired Englishmen to educate their sons, and Genzo had toured Europe and America with a Hasegawa cousin before returning to take the commission. That was how he'd been made a captain at

such a young age, and why even his superior Major Hayashi was careful not to offend him.

"We can't keep going around like this, sir." Captain Yamada finally directed his comment at Major Hayashi, and the whole group came to a halt. These were four sergeants, the local police chief Fukuda and two of his men, and a Korean guide.

"So what do you think we should do then, Captain?" Major Hayashi said, slowly and deliberately, as though they were back in the barracks and not in the snowy mountains, the night fast closing down on them.

"It's getting darker by the minute, and we won't find the right way at night if we lost it by day. We should make camp for tonight. As long as we can avoid freezing to death, we'll be able to make our way down tomorrow at first light."

The group fell even quieter, anxiously anticipating Major Hayashi's reaction. He had never before become impatient with Captain Yamada's impertinence, but this time, in such a dire state, the conflict had an air of mutiny. Major Hayashi regarded his subordinate's face with cool indifference, wearing the kind of expression he had when considering a new pair of boots or the best way to skin a rabbit. In spite of his pure and profound brutality, Hayashi was not a man given to uncalculated outbursts. At last, he turned to a sergeant and started giving orders for making camp. The group, visibly relieved, dispersed to collect firewood, or such as could be had when it was snowy and wet.

"Not you—you stay here with me," Major Hayashi said when the Korean guide, a timid creature named Baek, tried to scurry away. "Do you think I'd let you out of my sight?" Baek wrung his hands and whimpered, staring down at his feet bound in rags and shod in wet leather shoes.

Shortly after being assigned to the prefecture, Major Hayashi had asked Police Chief Fukuda where he could find game in these parts. Fukuda, who had made a detailed report and census of every Korean within fifty miles, had recommended three locals for the task of guiding their hunting party. The other two were potato farmers whom even other Koreans deemed quite savage, cloistered in the

deep mountains, mating among themselves, and living off the land, only coming out to join the rest of the world a handful of times a year on market days. They both knew every stick and stone in the mountains—but Baek, a traveling silk merchant, was the only one who could speak Japanese. Major Hayashi had considered that to be a more important qualification, much to the regret of all, not least Baek himself.

\* \* \*

**IT WOULD BECOME ONE OF** the images that would flash in front of Captain Yamada's eyes, just before the end of his life. The bearded man lying under the moonlight. When he'd gone about twenty feet into the woods to collect firewood, he nearly stumbled over the body sprawled out on the snow. After the initial shock, what struck Captain Yamada was how the man was spread calmly on his back, both hands over his heart—as if he hadn't frozen to death, but had fallen asleep in a moment of rapture. The second thing that struck him was how poorly clad this small man was. The quilted jacket he wore was so thin that the sharp angles of his shoulder blades showed clearly through.

Captain Yamada circled around the body. Then, for reasons he himself couldn't understand in retrospect, he lowered his ear to the bluish face.

"Hey, hey! Wake up!" he shouted, realizing that there was a trace of breath still flowing from the man's nostrils. When there was no response, Captain Yamada took the man's face in his hands and slapped it lightly. The man began to moan almost inaudibly.

Captain Yamada placed the man's head back on the snow. There was no reason he needed to help this nearly dead Josenjing, more of a vermin than a person. Captain Yamada started heading back toward the camp, but after a few steps he turned around, without understanding why. Sometimes the human heart was like a dark forest, and even a man as rational as Yamada had mysteries within. He picked up Josenjing in his arms, almost as easily as if he were a child.

"What the hell is this?" barked Major Hayashi when he returned.

"I found him in the woods," Captain Yamada said as he laid the man down on the ground.

"What do you want to do with a dead Josenjing? Unless you mean to burn him for fuel—and he'd make an awful fire—you should've left him where you found him."

"The man's still alive. He was hunting alone in these parts, which means he knows the mountains well. He might be able to find the way down," Captain Yamada explained coolly, unfazed by the veiled accusation of softheartedness; after all, that compassion had never been in the library of Yamada's motives and emotions was something both men knew well.

The rest of the group came back, and Captain Yamada ordered Baek to move the unconscious man next to the fire and shout to him in Korean. When he started coming to, Baek called out, smiling like a lunatic, "Sir! Sir! He's waking up!" Captain Yamada had Baek feed the man some crackers and dried persimmon from his own provisions.

"Make sure you stick the cracker in the snow to wet it a bit. He might choke otherwise," Captain Yamada said, and Baek promptly obeyed, holding the man's head on his lap and cooing something softly in Korean.

"Do they know each other?" Major Hayashi asked. He was eating his own supper of stiffly frozen *onigiri* and some pickled plum. There was even a bottle of sake that the sergeants were now passing around, suddenly merry and heartened.

"I don't think so. Baek didn't seem to recognize him," Captain Yamada said. Police Chief Fukuda also didn't know the man. But one of his officers thought that he might be a certain tenant farmer Nam, whose only distinction from all the other miserable peasants of the area was having once been in the Korean Imperial Army, and thus came to the police's attention.

"A dangerous man then. A viper," Major Hayashi said.

"He might prove himself useful. I would think it well worth keeping him alive for one night, if he can get us down this accursed mountain at dawn," Captain Yamada replied as calmly as ever. He



himself ate just a few crackers and a dried persimmon, and prepared to take the first watch.

\* \* \*

**THE DAWN CAME** without a sunrise, and illumined by the cinereal light the woods materialized around them once more. The absence of sun and shadows made everything seem weightless, as if the trees, rocks, and snow were all made out of soft silver air. It seemed a halfway world, a world between other worlds.

Upon waking to such a morning, Captain Yamada wondered if he was still dreaming and hoped that he would open his eyes to find himself in the warmth of his own bed. Then he realized the next moment where he truly was and felt almost sick to his stomach with disappointment. But by both nature and education, he'd been led to prize rationality and distrust emotions. He held love or even friendship in contempt as delusions of the lower classes, women, and unfit men. The biggest problem with emotions was that they were reactions to externalities rather than one's innate will and deliberate consciousness. Accordingly, he chastised himself for indulging in self-pity and shrugged his blanket off without delay.

Yamada got up and walked away to relieve himself; and there, just yards from where he was sleeping, he discovered huge paw prints, circling around the camp many times. He woke up Baek and the hunter, who had fallen asleep embracing each other for warmth. Baek jumped up instantly when he mentioned the tracks, and started explaining feverishly to the hunter in Korean. The latter man looked ill and weak, though his eyes were astonishingly sharp for someone who had nearly died just the previous night. He whispered something, then Baek helped pull him upright.

"What's he saying?" Captain Yamada asked as the hunter looked down at the tracks and mumbled in Korean.

"He's saying it must be a tiger. There's no other animal that has a footprint as big as a pot lid. Everyone knows that," Baek said. "Now he's saying, we need to go down now. The tiger was here all night watching us, and it's not happy."

"Why didn't anyone on watch see this tiger?" Captain Yamada asked, feeling irritated at the ones who had taken over after him. Baek relayed this to the hunter and then translated his answer.

"He says the tiger didn't want to be seen. You see tigers when they want to be seen, not a moment before. We're in their home, their land, so it's best we leave it alone and go quietly."

"Nonsense. If I see that beast before we make it down, I will kill it—and present the skin and the meat to the governor-general," Captain Yamada said. "You cowardly Josenjing slaves know nothing of bravery."

Baek hung his head low in acceptance. Nonetheless it was clear to all, especially Captain Yamada, that the sooner they could find their way out of the mountain, the better. The hunter led the way with surprising agility, given that he'd only broken his fast with a bit of rice crackers, seaweed, and pickles: it seemed that he was used to surviving on very little food. Captain Yamada had confiscated his bow and arrows, but the hunter appeared to take that as a matter of course and briskly slipped through the trees, neither resentful nor pleading.

"Be sure to shoot him if he tries to run," Major Hayashi said, and the captain replied, "Yes, sir."

The sun stayed hidden on this gray day, and the world became gradually brighter without any visible light. The wind pricked their skin like a thousand points of ice, colder and less forgiving than on the previous day. Every step they made turned into deep, clear impressions on the snow, and the hunter turned around from time to time as if worried. He whispered to Baek, who delivered the message to Captain Yamada.

"Please, we must move more quickly, he says," Baek pleaded. "He's certain the tiger is tracking us, and quite likely right at our heels."

"You Josenjing are truly pathetic, cowardly worms," Captain Yamada said scornfully. "Tell him we have guns, not bows and arrows. The officers in the Japanese Imperial Army do not flee from animals—we hunt them."

Baek fell silent and shuffled back to his place in the group, behind the hunter. The others smiled and nodded assent to the captain's speech, and boasted about this or that hunting party they had been on, and animals that they'd killed since coming to Joseon: white leopard cubs with ice-blue eyes, black bears with a pale crescent moon mark on their chest, stags, and wolves. But none claimed to have hunted a tiger which, though supposedly omnipresent, was the most clever creature of them all.

Even their boasts died down as time passed. With the sun moving across the sky unseen, they couldn't guess what time it was except through hunger and a creeping frustration. They hadn't planned on being lost for almost an entire day, and after a scanty-enough dinner, most of them had finished off their last provisions at breakfast. They marched in silence, until the hunter stopped in his tracks and held out his hand to the rest of the group. He pointed at a tree that was still swinging slightly, shedding snow as fine and white as sea spray.

"What is it?" Captain Yamada asked Baek. But before he could answer, they heard a deep, haunting sound, like thunder during the Long Rain season. They all felt an indescribable gaze of an unknown power; it was coming from the flash of orange and black between the trees just ahead of them—less than twenty yards away. It was watching them boldly, unmoving save for the twitching of its shaggy, frosted mane. Its bright yellow eyes dotted with jet-black pupils were the only things so vivid and alive in this world of only white.

Within a second, the soldiers all drew out their rifles and aimed at the tiger, which remained as still as a statue. Captain Yamada gave a nod to his officers, then fired the first shot of the many bullets that flew almost simultaneously from the squad. Triggered by the attack, the tiger took to its feet and started bounding toward them as if flying. It covered the yards between them in the blink of an eye as the soldiers froze in their places. Captain Yamada felt his heart turn to ice just as someone started moving across his field of vision. The hunter was rushing forward, holding both his hands up in the air.

"Don't!" His shout rang out in the glade and the trees trembled.  
"No!"

Without slowing down, the tiger spun and turned toward him.

"No! No!" the hunter repeated, until just a yard away from him, the tiger stopped in its tracks. It locked its yellow eyes with him for a moment, then circled and ran away just as quickly as it had come. When the soldiers started shooting again, it had already disappeared into the thicket—leaving a trail of bright red blood that dotted every third footprint, on its left hind leg.

"What are you all standing like that for?" Major Hayashi shouted. "We're going to follow it—it can't go very quickly. We'll kill it before nightfall."

The hunter said something rapidly to Baek. The old merchant pleaded, "This man thinks we have to let this tiger go. An injured tiger is far more dangerous than a healthy one, he says. Tigers are vengeful creatures. They remember wrongs and rights, and if it's injured, it will attack to kill.

"Even if we kill the tiger, that will be the end of us if we get stuck in the mountain for another night, and it being already colder than the night before . . . so says this man, sir."

Major Hayashi looked around at his men, who looked defeated and unwilling to go deeper into the mountain after the enormous beast. It had shown no sign of slowing down even with the wound.

Hayashi had led not only hunting parties such as this one, but also combat on the field, most recently in Manchuria against the Russians, and then of course the control of unrest and rebellions in Korea. He had never turned back from a fight but not out of bravery, which he equated to foolishness. He only believed in success, and even his bloodthirst was only secondarily for his own pleasure—primarily it was to assert his superiority to his peers and to intimidate his subordinates. Since success, to Hayashi, was of practical rather than virtuous nature, he again decided on the course that would serve him best. He ordered the Josenjing hunter to lead the descent.

Even as they made their way down and away from the beast, they felt as though a pair of yellow eyes were fixed on their necks



the entire time. But at last they found themselves on a trail, recognizable even under a foot of snow. A few hours later, they came out of the deep woods and onto the overlook where they could see the village down below. The straw-thatched roofs were glowing amber with an unexpected flash of the sun, finally breaking through the clouds just above the horizon.

If they hadn't been officers, they would have run down the slippery, snowy slope like children, overjoyed as they were by that sight. But tempered by the presence of their leader, they marched only a little faster. It took another half an hour before the men finally reached the foot of the hill where the village farms met the border of wilderness. The fallow fields under a blanket of snow were stamped with the footprints of birds and of children.

Major Hayashi ordered a halt and discussed something with the police chief, an oily and gluttonous man to whom a few days of hardship had given a temporarily gaunt appearance. The other officers laid down their packs and began smoking, chatting lightheartedly. They had already forgotten the terror, and were exhilarated by the prospect of warming themselves with food and fire, laughing over it all.

"You," Captain Yamada called out to the hunter, who cautiously stepped closer to Baek. "Your name."

"My name is Nam KyungSoo," the hunter said in halting Japanese.

"You were in the Korean Imperial Army?"

Baek translated for Nam, who nodded.

"You know it's illegal for Josenjings to possess weapons of any kind? I could have you arrested right now."

Baek looked mortified as he whispered in Korean to Nam, who merely glared back at Captain Yamada. The officer frowned back at the hunter. The two men couldn't have been more different: one, dressed in a warm officer's outfit and a fur-trimmed hat, handsome and lithe and bursting with energy even after three hard days in the forest; and the other, shorter man, sharp cheekbones casting dark shadows on his face, hair with more gray than black, looking as ancient, weathered, and bony as a rock.

But even so, Yamada momentarily saw something in the other man's eyes. Soldiers on opposing sides are much more alike than different, often resembling one another more closely than they do their respective civilians. Despite his mangy appearance, Nam looked like he would kill his enemies and protect his allies; Yamada respected that.

"I'm confiscating your weapons. If I ever hear you've been hunting again, I will arrest you personally. Consider that your reward for leading us back down."

Baek relayed the message while bowing deeply at the young officer. Yamada gave a curt nod in acknowledgment, but Nam only glared back for a moment before turning away.

"Hey, Baek!" Major Hayashi called out, and the old merchant shuffled forward.

"Yes, sir."

"You led us astray, you stupid worm," Major Hayashi said, almost lazily. Baek cowered and kept his head bowed low.

"I'm sorry sir, the snow covered the trails and made it impossible to find them, I've gone up and down these mountains hundreds of times, but . . ."

"You ruined our hunt, and almost got us killed," Major Hayashi said. "Go. I'd run fast if I were you."

Baek trembled, dipped his head multiple times, and turned on his heels to run as quickly as his old body would allow. When he had nearly crossed the length of the rice field, Major Hayashi slung his rifle over his shoulder—and fired.

Baek fell forward as if he'd tripped on a rock, his arms splayed wide. He didn't make any noise—or perhaps it was too far for the sound to carry, muffled by the icy ether. The blood spread slowly from the center of his back and soaked through his pack filled with silk.

"That made up for the lack of real sport, what do you think, Chief Fukuda?" Major Hayashi asked, and Fukuda agreed obsequiously.

"And as for that man Nam, I'll turn him over to you, since this is your jurisdiction."

"Ah yes, of course. We will make a very good example out of him," Fukuda said. "After we are done with him, no one will dare pick up a weapon again in these parts."

"That doesn't seem called for, Chief." Captain Yamada stepped forward. "This Josenjing led us down from the mountain. We wouldn't have made it otherwise."

"You also saved his life, so I'd consider that even. But add to that his poaching—seems the scale is tilted against him," Fukuda said, smiling as if satisfied by his own cleverness.

"But he also saved us from that tiger," Yamada replied coolly. "It appears to me that squares the score back to even." He looked from Fukuda to Major Hayashi, then back to Fukuda. "I have no love of filthy Josenjings, and have no doubt that I have killed enough of them on the field. But if you harm this man, you would be owing him a debt of life, and nothing is more dishonorable than owing something to an inferior. As he also saved my life, I can't allow that to happen and be shamed. Let him go free."

"You really speak out of turn, Captain," Fukuda said, turning red in the face. He looked at Major Hayashi to back him up.

Hayashi looked almost expressionless, which was when he was at his most dangerous. He licked his lips, a serpentine habit.

"It doesn't seem necessary, after all, to kill every Josenjing who knows these parts. He was indeed useful, unlike that worthless old man Baek," Hayashi said.

At that, Fukuda quickly gave up and they decided to head to the police station.

When he was sure of not being noticed, Yamada breathed out with a sense of genuine relief. He had never wished anything for or from others, which gave him a secret satisfaction all his life. He felt complete in his independence, and never longed for warmth even from his mother—a quiet, elegant lady with cold white hands—or for the love of a woman. But the possibility of losing his face because of Fukuda's brutishness had roused Yamada more than he'd even expected. He was irritated by this sense of attachment to another's fate. The less he could be certain of Nam's safety, the longer this attachment would last. So he pulled Nam aside, who had been

frozen silent, staring at Baek's body ahead. Crows were already gathered on it, cawing excitedly.

"If you get into trouble, come find me," Yamada said quietly, out of hearing of the others. "My name is Yamada Genzo."

Nam stared back. Yamada didn't know whether he'd understood, so he pulled out a silver cigarette case from the inside pocket of his coat and pressed it onto Nam's hand. Yamada ran his finger along its side, where his name was engraved. Then he pulled away with the rest of the officers; and now that Nam's fate was decided, at least temporarily, no one paid him any mind as he limped away on his own.

# **Part I**

**1918–1919**

# 1

## Secret Letters

1918

**ON A DAY HOVERING BETWEEN WINTER AND SPRING, THE CUSP OF** warmth just visible on the glistening ice, a woman and a girl walked ten miles of country road where tender green shoots were coming up like eyelashes. They had started their journey before dawn and did not stop until they arrived in front of a walled mansion in PyongYang.

The woman heaved a sigh and smoothed down the stray hairs clinging to the sides of her face. She looked more unkempt in contrast to her daughter, who had her shiny black tresses braided behind each ear and joined in one long rope down the center of her back. Jade had been made to work around the house and care for her siblings almost as soon as she could walk, but her mother had always combed and braided her hair every night. Her mother gave more food to her brothers because they were sons, but served her first because she was the oldest. These were the only acts of love Jade had received in the first ten years of her life. Now, she saw that even these had come to an end.

Jade tugged at her mother's sleeve.

"Can I go back home with you?" she said, her voice punctuated by tears.

"Stop crying like a child. Listen to me," her mother scolded her. "You'll be able to come visit for a half day, once every moon. Don't you want to help your mother and father?"

Jade nodded, mopping her face with little red hands like maple leaves. The weight of being a firstborn already hung heavily over her frame.

A servant greeted them at the side entrance and made them wait in the courtyard. There were several tile-roofed villas facing them on three sides, emanating that otherworldly air of fine and old mansions. Even without any wind, Jade was enveloped by a cool draft that seemed to be the house's exhalation. Where the wooden floor of the porch was rubbed smooth and dipped low, she could envision the countless guests taking off their shoes before entering: men seeking pleasure, solace, some jolting reminder of their virility or perhaps their first passion. Though Jade was young, it was easy to see what the men wanted here. Their motivations were simple—to feel alive. It was the women who remained outside of her understanding. Did they ever feel alive, the way they made the men feel?

One of the doors of the villa opened and a woman emerged. Even before she turned around, Jade could immediately tell that she was extremely beautiful just from the shape of her back and the particularly graceful distance between her nape and her shoulders. When she showed her face and even deigned to flash a small smile in their direction, Jade felt her insides clamp with yearning. Instead of the more common kind of female beauty that elicited jealousy in other women, this stranger had the much rarer kind that drew them in with a promise of something that might also rub off on them. But underneath an air of general benevolence, she was not easygoing. She seemed to toy with people's attraction to her, raising their hopes and then watching them cower.

Jade's mother gave a stiff bow, impervious to the woman's charms. Even though they were tenant farmers throwing themselves to a tiny plot of land, they were technically of a higher class than the



*giseng*—who belonged to the same ignoble rung as butchers and tanners. Those who made their money in the filth.

"So this is the child?" the courtesan said mildly, and her mother mumbled in response. A cousin's friend was a servant in this house, which was how Jade was arranged to be taken in as a laundry maid earning two won a month, plus her room and board.

"It's a long way to be walking in the mud and the snow," the woman said to her mother but kept her gaze fixed on Jade. Then she sighed, as if seeing something regrettable that could not be helped. Jade imagined that those slender eyes were accustomed to judging the value of finer things, and that her own dry, chapped face was so beneath the mark as to incite pity, like a three-legged dog.

"Auntie, I'm sorry to tell you this. But there's been a mistake. I didn't hear anything from you for a fortnight and so I went ahead and hired another girl to help around the house. But since you've made this trip, please go and have a meal in the kitchen. Rest a while before heading back," she said, shaking her beautiful head wreathed in a braided chignon.

"No, how can that be, Madame Silver? We had sent word." Jade's mother pressed her hands together in front of her chest. The gesture struck Jade as rustic and off-putting, especially in contrast to Silver's cool elegance. "Wouldn't you need another helper in such a big household? My Jade has been taking care of chores since she was four years old. She's bound to be useful."

"I have plenty of help as is," Silver said impatiently. Nevertheless, Jade sensed that the courtesan continued to stare at her with a curious expression in that calm oval face. It was a look of someone who didn't always deign to respond to others and spoke only when it pleased her to say something.

"But if you want, I can take Jade as an apprentice." Silver turned to her mother with an air of finality. "One-time payment of fifty won—as much as she would have earned as a maid in two years. Plus her room, board, training, and clothes. After she starts working in a few years and pays me back the fifty won plus interest, she'll be free to send you whatever she likes."

Jade's mother drew a tight line with her mouth. "I didn't come here to sell my daughter to become a *courtesan*," she managed to spit out, overpronouncing the last word in lieu of saying: whore. "What kind of a mother do you think I am?"

"As you wish." Silver didn't seem perturbed, but Jade noticed that the corner of her mouth twisted with the tail end of a scornful smile. "At any rate, please help yourself to some soup in the kitchen," she said, turning around.

"Wait, Madame." Jade was surprised to hear herself speak. Her mother tapped her shoulder to silence her, but she continued. "I will stay here as an apprentice . . . It's okay, Mama. I'll do it."

"Shush. You don't know anything about what this is," her mother said. Had they been alone, she would have poured out salty diatribes about women who made their keep between their legs. In Silver's presence, she only smacked Jade between her sharp shoulder blades like the folded wings of an unfledged bird.

Silver smiled, as if hearing the unspoken thoughts. "It's true, this isn't for everyone. Do you know what we do?"

Jade brightly blushed and nodded. Her friends whose sisters had been married at fourteen or fifteen had told her what had happened on their wedding night. It seemed unpleasant but the thought also made her clutch her thighs. All things considered, whether it happened for free with one man or for money with many men seemed to be of little consequence, physically speaking. Jade would have been married off in a few years anyway to whoever offered the highest price, like the village doctor, who had been tirelessly seeking a bride for his sick son. In spite of her pity, Jade felt anything was preferable to marrying that simple boy with his clawlike hands. She wouldn't really be his wife, but his sister and then later his mother.

Fifty won was more than twice as much as even that doctor would give, and the money could go a long way—a small plot of land from their landlord, a young rooster and healthy hens for a chicken run. They would never again go to bed without dinner. They could send the boys to school, and the younger girl could make a match with a respectable, landowning family. But only if no one in the village knew that Jade had been sold to a courtesan's house.

Jade could almost see the same vision reflected in her mother's dark eyes, too exhausted even for tears. Silver reached out and held her mother's hand, and she didn't pull away.

"In my experience, even a girl kept in a convent can grow up to be a courtesan if she's meant to become one. The reverse is also true, and more often too. If Jade isn't meant for this, she'll find another path, even if she's raised in a *gibang*." Silver smiled gently. "I almost have no hand in it."

\* \* \*

**JADE HAD NEVER SEEN HERSELF** in a mirror before arriving at Silver's house. The muted reflections she did glimpse on washing basins had not been a source of special vanity. She had a matte, smooth skin with a candle-wax yellow tinge. Her eyes were small but very bright under a pair of fluffy eyebrows like black feathers. By looking very closely, one could see that her left iris was positioned ever so slightly off-center, pointing outward—a fishlike tendency. Her lips were round and red, even without rouge. Her smile—twinkly, with an undertone of mischief—would have been considered charming had it not framed a few undeniably crooked upper teeth. There were other peculiarities to her physique that a more exceptional girl certainly would not have had. All told, Jade was the kind of young girl who stood exactly at the midpoint between plain and pretty. She hadn't minded, since her mother was suspicious of beauty in general.

Her mother had also viewed too much schooling as poisonous to young girls. Jade had been allowed just a year of classes at the one-room school for all the village students ranging from ages five to twenty. Even amid that chaos, she'd learned more than just simple sums and rudimentary letters, which was all that her mother would have preferred. Because of school, Jade had stopped feeling like a dutiful part of the household like the furnace or the hoe. She both shrank and expanded with knowledge, and was startled by her own, hazy discontent. This was, of course, why learning was deemed so dangerous in the first place. If she'd said aloud what swirled inside her head, her mother would have pinched and slapped her far more

often. This fear even subdued her tears at their farewell, for she didn't know whether crying would please or anger her mother.

Jade remained silent and docile as she followed Silver along the first-floor porch. But the house called out to her in secret, and she longed to touch the columns made of fifty-year-old pines and painted red with cinnabar. When she passed by, silk lanterns danced under the eaves, somehow evoking both stillness and movement, artificiality and naturalness. That heady atmosphere could be felt all throughout the house, Jade thought as Silver led her down the hallway; but it was most noticeable in Silver herself. Jade had never seen anyone who glided so much as did Madame Silver—she looked barely capable of having such lowly body parts as feet and toes. And yet, Jade thought there was no one who better exemplified the naturalness of a woman. Silver smiled and spoke with the complete ease of someone who was born to be a female and knew it. She stopped gliding a few feet ahead of Jade and slid open a rice-papered door.

"This is the music classroom," Silver said. All four walls of the large hall were decorated with lavishly painted screens. On one side of the room, there were a dozen very young girls learning a traditional song, repeating line by line after an older courtesan; on the opposite side, eleven- or twelve-year-old girls were practicing the *gayageum*.

"The girls who are singing are in the first year. In the second year, you begin learning the *gayageum*, *daegeum*, and different types of drums. So these are two of the five arts that a courtesan must master—song and instrument," Silver explained. As she spoke, one of the singing girls jumped up from her seat and scampered toward them. Jade could almost hear Silver knit her brows in disapproval.

"Mama, who is this?" the little girl asked Silver, and Jade tried to hide her surprise. With a round face and undistinguished features, the girl looked nothing like her elegant mother.

"You should never leave class without your teacher's permission," Silver said sternly, and Jade was reminded of her own mother. She

wondered whether there were any mothers in the world who didn't greet their daughters with anger.

"The class will be over in just a few minutes," the girl persisted. "Is she new? Can I take her around?"

Silver hesitated for a second, as though remembering important tasks much more worthy of her time, then dismissed them both with a flick of her hand. The girl took Jade by the elbow and led her along the hallway.

"I'm Lotus. Thanks for getting me out of class." She giggled. "What's your name?"

"Jade."

"That's a nice name. You probably won't need to change it," Lotus said, opening another sliding door. In this room, slightly smaller than the first room, a set of students were practicing watercolor paintings on one side and calligraphy on the other.

"Did Mama tell you about the five arts of a courtesan? Here are three and four: painting and poetry . . . We also take Korean, Japanese, and arithmetics here. You get tested on every subject once a month, and if you don't get everything correct, you have to repeat that month."

"Even Japanese and arithmetics?" Jade asked, feeling troubled.

"Aye, *especially* those two." Lotus nodded gravely. "I've been held back from moving on to second year for a while now. But that means we can be in the same class!"

Lotus giggled and ran up the flight of stairs to the second floor, and Jade followed her, breathless with laughter. Here, Lotus pulled Jade into the biggest classroom she had seen yet. This room was empty, its polished wooden floor shiny with wear. There were masks and colorful robes hanging on the walls; in one corner, stretched-leather drums and other instruments were neatly stacked one on top of the other.

"This room is for the fifth art of a courtesan—dance. You start learning it in the second year," Lotus said. "So this is it for our school building. Let me show you where you'll sleep."

The girls' dormitory was a single-story villa behind the school. They were crossing the courtyard toward the first years' bedroom

when a dazzlingly beautiful girl came out of the kitchen wing. Jade could see that she was not a servant, however, from her costly outfit and the haughty way she was nibbling on a piece of rice taffy. She caught sight of them and started heading in their direction.

"My older sister Luna," Lotus whispered. Luna was unmistakably her mother's daughter. She resembled Silver the way the moon's reflection on the river mirrored its source.

"You're the new girl," Luna said, playing with the end of her braid, which was as thick and fluffy as a leopard's tail. Her face was so radiant that Jade could only steal glances in bits and pieces, a nose here and a mouth there.

"Yes, I'm Jade," she answered with a timid smile, and Luna broke into a splendid laughter.

"You'd be pretty if your teeth weren't so bad. They look like tombstones," the older girl taunted.

"And you have a brain like tombstones," Lotus said without missing a beat. But even the flush of rage did nothing to mar Luna's face and only made her look more like an adolescent empress. Despite her physical resemblance to Silver, Luna was more lively and cruel, with none of Silver's statuesque graciousness toward the less fortunate.

"You unruly girl. This is why no one loves you, even Mama," Luna said. Her younger sister just held her gaze until she swept away in contempt.

That night, Jade lay awake in her cot, wondering how she would last a month at the school, let alone graduate and become a courtesan. If she failed her exams, perhaps Silver would turn her into a servant after all. Even now, she was not far ahead of a servant in the household's hierarchy, and making an enemy of Luna was an inauspicious beginning. Complete obedience to the older students and courtesans was surely the most basic tenet at the school. Jade could tell that there were numerous other unspoken rules and expectations at play, and Silver was the undisputed judge who presided over them all.

Nevertheless, Jade soon learned that the mistress didn't take her position for granted. Nor was she a mystical being who never raised

her voice except to pronounce platitudes. She exacted punishment on young apprentices who defied older courtesans, and older courtesans who spread gossip or hid their earnings from the house. Bedspreads soiled with menstrual blood, a filched hairpin, even a pot of honey from which a few spoonfuls kept disappearing—nothing escaped her notice. Although she became involved in the pettiest issues, her face remained gravely detached with the impassive attitude of a pale-faced beauty in a seventeenth-century painting. Jade saw that in all aspects Silver cultivated an antique aura, by both natural disposition and conscious decision. Her huge braided crown—a mix of her own hair and wig—would have been old-fashioned and fattening on many women. On her, it spoke to a romantic attachment to the past, a poetic sensibility.

The mistress of the house rarely complimented or took notice of Jade during the first few months. The only one who took any interest in her was Lotus, who was herself not a favorite in the house. Whenever she fought with her older sister, Silver always favored the latter. In their mother's eyes, Lotus was lazy, sneaky, and impetuous, and Luna could do no wrong. Knowing this didn't stop Lotus from trying to swipe back at her sister with tenacity and cunning, like a cat hiding behind a wall to spring out and attack. But with Jade, she readily retracted her claws. She could talk for hours about things of which she had only the faintest idea: the latest fashions, gossip circulating around Pyongyang and Seoul, types of men, types of women, and what went on behind certain doors of the establishment where they were forbidden to go. Jade found her flagrant interest in male company shocking, not because she was young but because she was not pretty. Lotus had a bland moonfaced look that was more common in the South—not the oval delicacy of her mother, an archetypal Pyongyang beauty. Until then, Jade had supposed that attractive women and girls had greater sensual appetites, and she now saw that this was not necessarily true.

Once they became better friends, Jade thought of this surplus of desire as not a peculiarity but just a quality. She no longer saw her friend's face as plain, but intriguing. Jade came to appreciate Lotus's gift of gab, the way she could make anything sound like shooting



stars—unexpected and marvelous phenomena of which they were the only two witnesses. They were the perfect complements, because Jade liked to think endlessly and Lotus liked to talk constantly, and between the two the right balance was struck. Lotus also had a talent for transgressions: one afternoon, she stacked pillows, climbed to the top of the wardrobe, and nonchalantly pulled down the jar where Silver kept her personal stash of honey. Jade watched in amazement, until Silver came in and caught Lotus in the act. Even while being punished—made to stand on one foot or kneel with her arms high over her head—Lotus would cross her eyes and stick out her tongue behind her mother's back, making Jade laugh.

Shortly after their first monthly exam—which Jade had passed despite her worst fears, even Japanese—Lotus answered the question Jade had been too delicate to ask: why she and her sister were so unlike.

"The only man Mama has ever loved is Luna's father. They met when she was nineteen. She still wears the ring that he gave her. Even though she's had other patrons, she has never taken off that silver ring in years and years," Lotus told her. Jade remembered seeing the shimmering band, not as expensive or ornate as Silver's other jewels but noticeable for its heavy, rounded elegance.

Whereas Luna was born out of tragic love, Lotus was simply an accident left behind by a careless patron. Jade secretly believed that this was why Silver treated her younger daughter with such indifference; Lotus was the only thing in her life that had happened completely against her wishes. If a woman like Silver couldn't end up happy, Jade thought it was unlikely she herself would wind up better. Courtesans were considered past their prime by twenty-five and geriatric by thirty. If they didn't manage to become a concubine or a madame before then, they could end up no different from a common prostitute. Naturally, the senior courtesans in Silver's house excelled in the art of falling in love with wizened landlords and decrepit bankers. This was a game at which the men and the women participated in harmonious complicity.

Jade—a few years away from becoming a provincial courtesan of middling looks—still couldn't imagine bedding some landowner with

gold teeth and terrible breath. Instead, she dreamed of handsome young aristocrats with a weakness for poetry. According to Silver, the best and most admired courtesans in history could agitate the noblest gentlemen just through poetic correspondences. They often fell deeply in love without even seeing each other's faces, so intensely heightened were their epistolary skills. Sometimes these passions were consummated; other times they tragically went on their whole lives burning with longing. Jade daydreamed often about these romances, sighing as offerings to these thwarted loves. Perhaps this was why her mother had warned against the corruptive power of education—even without any man in sight, language itself seduced her. She fluttered with the knowledge that certain words in a certain order could rearrange her on the inside, like moving furniture. Words changed and remade her constantly, and no one else could even sense a difference. So after their lessons, while other girls busied themselves with strolling in the garden or steaming their skin with rice water, Jade practiced her letters alone.

**WHEN SPRING ARRIVED, SILVER MOVED** the afternoon literature class to the folly in the garden. Each day, she assigned a girl to recite classical poetry by heart. For her turn Jade chose a poem by Hwang Jini, a sixteenth-century courtesan who made conquests of royals, monks, scholars, penniless artists, and rich philanderers alike. She was said to have had no equal in poetry, calligraphy, literature, painting, dance, and music, and her reputation for beauty spread throughout the kingdom and even reached China. But what Jade admired the most about her was that she freely chose her lovers and left them without tears.

Silver called Jade to the front of the class, and she began:

"Floating on the river, that little boat of pine tree,  
How many years has it been moored by the shore?  
If the next one asks who has crossed the river first,  
I shall say it was a man both learned and gallant."

When she'd first read it, the poem had jolted her with both pain and pleasure. But the other girls seemed utterly unmoved. Only

Lotus's face was distorted from suppressing a yawn.

"Very well—one of my favorites," Silver said approvingly. "Now who can tell me what this means?"

The girls looked around at one another furtively, shifting in their seats. Lotus piped, "Is it about going boating, Mama?" and the others twittered and giggled in unison.

"No, of course not. I really despair of teaching you lot any poetry." Silver shook her head gravely. Jade was about to raise her hand when Stoney appeared, bowed to his mistress, and rapped the wooden floor with his knuckles.

"The silk merchant is here? A new one then?" Silver asked. She could make out Stoney's hand-tapped messages no matter how complicated they were; no one else could understand the deaf-mute servant. Silver sighed and rose to standing in one graceful movement.

"I must go look at the fabrics. You may play now," she decreed, and the girls bowed their heads low.

"I could've sworn it was about boating. What do you think it means?" Lotus asked Jade as they slipped on their shoes. Jade had known what the poem meant and even the reason Silver liked it so much. That was why she'd chosen it in the first place.

"It's about a woman who is remembering her first love," she replied.

Among all the courtesans and apprentices, Jade felt that she was the only person who understood this secret language taught by her mistress. Regarding the things her best friend couldn't understand, Jade spoke to books instead. She wondered if she would one day find someone who would speak it back to her.

\* \* \*

**IN HER BEDCHAMBER, SILVER SAT** down on her silk cot and waited for the merchant, one hand mindlessly twirling the ring on her finger. Through her latticed doors decked with gemstone tassels, she could hear the girls shrieking and laughing in their play.

"Madame Silver, this is Merchant Chun, at your service," the silk merchant announced himself outside her door.

"Please come in."

The merchant opened the sliding door and entered, carrying his pack full of fabrics and trinkets. He bowed low at Silver, who gestured at the burden on his back.

"Do put down that heavy pack and take a seat. And please make yourself comfortable. I've already asked my servant to bring in some refreshments."

"Thank you, Madame, your kindness is unwarranted," Chun said, and then took the pack off his back and laid it down on the floor. He himself sat cross-legged on the silk cushion she'd already set out for him, as Stoney brought over a tray of clear wine and squash fritters—delicacies that only a wealthy courtesan could afford these days.

"I was truly devastated to hear about Old Man Baek," Silver said. "You're a member of his guild—so you must know he's been bringing his wares to this house since even before my time."

Instead of an answer, Chun simply bowed his head.

"Were you close with him, Master Chun?"

"Madame, he was my family. My mother's brother."

"So have you inherited all of his territory?" Silver asked, suddenly keen. Chun considered her face for a moment before answering quietly.

"Yes, Madame. He'd lost his sons long ago and I was his closest kin, heir, and confidant."

"Show me your wares, then," Silver said.

Chun unwound the white fabric that wrapped around his pack. Inside there was a wooden crate that held bolts of silk in summer colors—lightest blue, celadon gray, azalea pink, forsythia yellow, willow green, elegant navy blue for the senior women like Silver, and exuberant camellia red for young girls just beginning to bloom. He pulled out jewelry as well: the silk tassels with coral and jade that dangle provocatively from just below a woman's cropped, unlined jacket; *garakji* double rings, worn stacked in pairs and made of enameled silver, amber, and green or white jade; a gold *binyuh* used to fix a chignon. Then there were jars of fragrant powder from

England, cold cream from Japan, rouge for lips and cheeks, camellia oil for smooth and shiny hair, and a silk pouch with real musk, said to have aphrodisiac powers.

Silver picked out a number of fabrics and makeup, lightening his load considerably. When she finished, she turned to look at him.

"This is all great, but have you anything else?" she asked searchingly.

Though Chun and Baek were supposedly close relations, there was very little in the way of resemblance between the two men. Silver had known Baek for years; behind his frail frame and subservient demeanor concealed an immense physical strength that allowed him to make trips from the East Sea to Pyongyang, then all the way to Uiju every year into his old age. In his younger years he had traveled to both Shanghai and Vladivostok, though he'd long given much of his former responsibilities to the younger men of his guild. By contrast, Chun's tawny face with shrewd, almost reptilian eyes gave Silver no immediate impulse to trust.

The merchant pulled out a sheet of folded paper from inside his sleeve and offered it to her with two hands. Silver drew a sharp breath and broke open the seal.

As always happened when she saw the general's writing, her hands holding the edges of the paper trembled lightly. She read the letter quickly, drinking his words with her eyes. He thanked her for the money she'd sent last summer and told of the victories and losses in the Siberian hills. His troops followed him into any battle, cold and unequipped as they were in contrast to their enemy. Some of them had brought their wives and children over to Vladivostok, and their happy reunions made him long to see her and Luna's faces. "She must be beautiful if she takes after you. But I fear I'll never see our daughter again before I die," he wrote.

She carefully folded the letter and hid it inside a book on her table. She would reread it again, slowly, when alone and free to dwell on every character.

"Thank you, Master Chun. When I heard Master Baek was killed, I thought this letter would have been found and all would be lost . . . our own lives and those of our men in Vladivostok. I waited

all the rest of winter, expecting the worst . . . I slept with a knife by my bed, prepared to end my own life if they came, and yet they didn't."

"Those bastards left his body without searching it—if they had, everything surely would have gone the way you feared," Chun said. "My uncle was planning on luring them to our forces in the mountains, and killing a police chief and high-ranking officers would have been an immense victory . . . But either he truly lost his way in the snow, or our men weren't at their meeting place." Neither Chun nor Silver voiced what they both knew—that if the independence fighters didn't take advantage of trapping a group of lost Japanese soldiers, they may well have been killed off themselves in another unrecorded battle.

"And your uncle's body was untouched until you got to it?"

"No, Madame. I was myself ignorant of what had happened, as I was all the way South at the time. But there was a villager who picked up his body and prepared it for burial. A poor widower with three small children, on the brink of starving to death but an honest man nonetheless. He kept all my uncle's belongings for me until I got there for the funeral, and nothing was missing or tampered with, even his coins."

"What good fortune that was," Silver muttered. She opened her vanity chest and took out two drawstring pouches—one white and the other red, both heavy with solid gold ingots.

"The white one is for your troubles," she said, handing the pouches. "The red one is for the cause. Do you trust the man who will carry this across the border?"

"Madame, it will be no different than when my uncle was living," Chun said. "We lowly merchants love gold as much as any others, but even we have honor."

"I know that well, Master Chun. You should know too that what I give you now isn't just from me, but from almost all Pyongyang courtesans. It's the money we made pouring drinks and lying with men, and the jewelry we've hoarded for our retirement."

Master Chun bowed his head curtly in lieu of a response.

"How long will you stay in town? And when will you come back?" Silver asked.

"I will leave tomorrow at first light. I may be back by fall if I am lucky."

"You should spend the night here, it will be far more comfortable than the inn."

"Thank you, Madame, but that would attract undue attention. And there are my guild brothers waiting for me at the inn . . ." Chun said, already rising. "I should get going."

"Wait, I almost forgot," Silver said. "That poor man who recovered Master Baek's body . . . If you pass by his village on your way out of the city, would you give him something from me?" Silver opened her chest again and picked up this or that trinket. She'd sold her best jewelry and turned them into gold, which the merchant had already tucked safely into his pack. Finally, she pulled off her silver ring and gave it to Chun, smiling wanly.

"Please tell him that it's not very expensive, but that it was my favorite," she said, her lovely voice hesitating only slightly. Master Chun bowed his head once more before taking his leave.

All of her most expensive trinkets combined had meant far less to her than giving up this silver ring. But life had to be kept in balance: she had to do what actually felt like a sacrifice. She would gladly trade her life itself for the safety of the people she loved—the general, Luna, and Lotus. If those three were trapped in a burning house, she would pour a bucket of water over her head and jump into the fire to carry them out. That was the meaning of her love, she declared in her head. But her hand grieved, even as Chun went out the city gates the next morning to deliver the ring to the house of the hunter.



## 2

### Luna

1918

**THE MOST EXTRAORDINARY TURN OF EVENTS BEGAN WITH A DROP OF** a pin, an aberration stealing by no more dramatically than a stray dog. One morning, Jade woke up and discovered that all classes had been canceled. She ran outside to greet the air, like a new bee emerging from its cocoon in warm weather. The day was full of early-June vigor. The trees were singing their notes of green, and their freshness could be heard by the eyes. The girls were let loose in the garden like calves, and even Jade wasn't sorry about taking a break from books. When she plopped down to play cat's cradle with Lotus, the reason for such leniency became clear: Silver and Luna, both dressed in their loveliest outfits, were heading out for the day. As they crossed the courtyard, little girls with envious round faces crowded around, all silently yearning for an outing of their own. Jade alone pulled back, unwilling to annoy Silver with neediness. But Lotus came forward and ventured to say, "Mama, I want to come too," in the sad voice of a child knowingly playing up her childishness.

Silver glanced at her younger daughter as if organizing her jewelry box and discovering a memento of an uncertain vintage—

amused and slightly embarrassed, but ultimately indifferent. After a moment she said, "Luna is herself only getting her photo taken at fifteen. I will take you too when you're older." She ignored Lotus's crestfallen face with her customary hauteur and climbed onto the rickshaw after Luna, her silk skirt billowing lavishly out of her seat.

An outing was a rare treat for even Luna, who kept sticking her head dangerously far out of the rickshaw and hovering at the edge of her seat. As they moved farther away from their house, Luna gradually lost sight of the things which were familiar to her, until everything around her was new and strange. Passing this or that landmark, her mother explained to her, "That's the new rubber shoe factory that Mr. Hong set up this year. He's already had sales of two thousand won," and "that's the secondary school—you'd see the boys later, but now they must all be in class," or "that sharp pointy thing there is where the Christians worship. They sing too, though not like we do."

"Mama, do you know any Christians? I heard that they were all secretly loyal to the Yankees," Luna said.

"I don't know any Christian who would be patron or friend to us courtesans," Silver said, frowning. "But how can you not become servants to Yankees when you believe in their God? It's not natural."

The rickshaw stopped in front of the studio and the women descended from the carriage, using their fans to shield their pale faces from the sun. The studio door jingled cheerfully as they walked in. The photographer greeted them and led them to the shooting area, which had velvet-upholstered chairs against a plain gray backdrop.

According to the photographer's directions, Silver sat on an armchair and Luna stood with her hands on her mother's shoulder. The photographer lit a lamp to one side of the camera and instructed them not to blink. He counted to three, then a bright flash went off, causing Luna to briefly go blind; then the faded Western-style chairs and props in the studio came back into focus, crowding her world once more. She had a very strange sensation like waking up after a long nap and not knowing whether it's dusk or dawn. It

was a little lapse in her one long, continuous, uneventful existence—a skipped heartbeat, the meaning of which was as yet unclear.

As they prepared to leave, the doorbell jingled again and a pair of Japanese officers came in.

“Welcome back, sir,” the photographer said loudly in Japanese. “Your photos are ready.” At the same time Silver slipped by quickly, leading Luna by the hand. The officers cast a long look at the women as they rushed out and drove away in the rickshaw.

“Here they are. The photos turned out very nicely. I hope you’ll be pleased, Major Hayashi,” the photographer said, offering an envelope containing some photos of the officers, which he had been called to take after the town’s Japanese photographer suddenly died of tuberculosis the previous year. But Major Hayashi barely even looked at the photos, asking instead, “Who were those two women?”

“My old friend and her daughter,” the photographer replied nervously, looking over Hayashi’s shoulder at his associate who, though dressed in a Japanese officer’s uniform, was undoubtedly Korean.

“Sir, that was a famous courtesan named Silver, known as the most beautiful in Pyongyang,” the Korean man said in perfectly manicured Japanese. Then, with an eagerness that these spontaneous encounters effected in even the most coldhearted, he added, “I hadn’t seen her in many years but recognized her immediately.”

\* \* \*

**WHEN SILVER SENT STONEY** to pick up the prints from the photographer, Luna was disappointed that they wouldn’t go out again themselves. The drive had been most refreshing, and she liked seeing new sights. Most of all, she’d felt a secret thrill at the look that the officers had given her. It made her want to dress up in fine clothes and ride around town all day; she giggled, imagining how tiresome that would be for the poor rickshaw driver. Then she thought that she didn’t want to sleep in her mother’s chamber

anymore, and was guilty for feeling that way because she knew how much her mother loved her.

Soon, it became so hot that the women took to sleeping out on the cool wooden floor of the covered porch. Luna gave the heat as an excuse and also joined in with the others. The women laid out their cots together so that they made one long bedding on the floor. To ward off mosquitoes they burned sweet-scented wormwood incense that snaked up to the pitch-black sky. The younger girls, excited by this changing of routine, whispered all night, lying in a row like a string of chatty pearls.

One night in bed, Luna said, "Hey, Lotus, I'm dying for some cold, sweet watermelon. Go cut up the one in the kitchen."

"Why should I? I'm not your maid," Lotus said, tucked in her place far away from her sister.

"Because I'm your older sister, you brat. Go do it now, or I'll tell Mama."

Sensing Lotus was about to get into another hopeless fight with Luna, Jade quickly got up.

"I'll go get it," she said, pulling on her slippers. She went round the back courtyard to the kitchen. Inside, there was a large wooden bucket filled with cold water, where the maid had put the watermelon to keep it cool. Jade placed it on the chopping block and stood examining it with a knife in her hand, like an executioner. A creeping sense of malaise came over her.

Jade held the sharp edge of the knife against the dark green skin of the watermelon, and pressed down hard. With a crisp crack, the knife slid down and revealed the deep pink flesh speckled with black seeds. She was cutting the halves into quarters when she felt something bite her hand. She looked down at her left palm and saw a deep gash, from which dark orbs of blood like pomegranate seeds were welling up rapidly. She held her hand away from the watermelon, letting the blood fall onto the floor instead. Without any rags to bind the wound, she balled up her bare left hand into a tight fist, and struggled to clean up the mess and wash up the cutting board and knife with one hand.

Jade wobbled back to the portico, carrying the watermelon wedges in a basket with her right arm. She heard them before she saw them: deep, unfamiliar voices speaking in a mix of Korean and Japanese. Rounding the corner, she saw the girls in their petticoats, standing in a row next to their cots. Walking around in the courtyard in front of them were four men, and next to them in her fine silk outfit, Silver. Jade found Stoney in the corner of her eye and breathed a sigh of relief.

"These are all the girls you have at this school?" asked a Korean man in Western civilian dress.

"Yes," Silver answered quietly. Her eyes were bloodshot even in the moonlight. Jade thought of the knife in the kitchen and backed away quietly—but her feet crunched lightly on the sand, and the Korean officer whipped his head around like a hound.

"You weren't trying to hide this one?" he said, grabbing Jade by the shoulders and making her stand in front of him.

"No, of course not. I didn't even realize she was out of bed," Silver said.

The other three men were dressed in uniform. One of them said something to the plainclothes officer in Japanese, stepping onto the portico without taking off his boots.

"Are you aware that all courtesans' establishments, brothels, and the like must be licensed and operated by the government?" the Korean man asked.

"This house has been in operation for more than a century, passed down from daughter to daughter," Silver said. "We've always paid our taxes. We've done nothing out of tradition."

"Don't pretend to be a fool, you whore. I'd be more careful with my words, if I were you—I know very well what you've been up to," he snapped, and she fell into silence. "You should be thankful that Major Hayashi hasn't shut this place down already," he added, glancing at the uniformed officer on the portico.

With his square head and muscular neck barely contained by his collar, Jade thought that the man called Hayashi looked like a khaki-clad bull. He walked slowly up and down the portico, looking at the girls with keen interest. They kept their faces bowed, and he paused

in front of a girl, held up her face in his hand, and turned it left and right, before moving on to the next one. He stopped when he reached Luna and smiled, then shouted jovially in Japanese to his officers. They laughed.

Major Hayashi lifted up Luna's chin, studying her face closely. She kept her eyes downcast, her arms folded tightly over her chest. The major let go of her face and forcefully uncrossed her arms, letting them fall limply to her sides. Then he ran his finger across her collarbone, and then down to her chest, bound tightly by her petticoat. He cupped her breast in his hand and roughly squeezed, until she let out a distressed moan.

"Please." Silver turned to the Korean officer, suddenly more deferential. "I raised that one with more care than if she'd been born to a noble family. From birth she's only been treated like a young lady. This girl is not a courtesan. She's not even registered in the guild." Then she added, "He can have anyone but her."

"Among the young ones, she is clearly the best, and you yourself are too old. Better shut up about it rather than risk lives," the officer said. "If you don't want him to take her here in front of everyone, you may as well give him a room."

"No, I won't," Silver said defiantly. It only took one look from her, and suddenly Stoney leaped out of the corner and threw himself between Luna and the major, pushing the man away. The major's men all picked up their rifles and aimed at Stoney, causing the girls to scream. Hayashi himself staggered a little, then regained his composure with a smile. He threw a punch at Stoney's face, which he blocked with one arm. But immediately two of the officers grabbed hold of Stoney's arms, twisted them against his back, and forced him down to the floor, kicking and struggling silently. When Stoney was finally pinned down on his belly, the major lit up a cigarette and took a long drag, putting a booted foot on top of Stoney's neck.

Jade didn't know if the high-pitched shriek was coming from her own mouth or the other women's. Hearing the commotion, Hayashi laughed, digging in the heel firmly with all his bullish weight; Stoney, unable to scream out, panted like a dog. Some of the young girls

were openly crying, and the older ones were frozen in terror, biting their lips. Jade felt her knees wobble and the edges of her consciousness fraying.

Hayashi muttered in Japanese, of which Jade could only catch the words for Joseon filth. He breathed out a white column of smoke and stepped even harder onto Stoney's neck. Sweat was streaming down the mute man's back, and his face was turning blue.

"Stop, please!" Silver rushed onto the portico and knelt next to Stoney. "Don't kill this man, he meant no harm." She too was crying—something she'd never done in front of the others. "He's only a simpleton and a mute, please have mercy."

It didn't matter that the major didn't understand Korean. He took his foot off and kicked Stoney's head hard—there was a loud cracking sound like a watermelon bursting. The officers then let go of their grasp, but Stoney was long past the point of struggling and lay limply in place.

Without waiting any longer, Hayashi grabbed Luna by her arm and dragged her to the floor. She screamed, kicking him away, and he hit her so hard across her head that her long hair flew out of its braid, covering her face. After he punched her several more times she stopped resisting and lay still and silent beneath him. Jade shut her eyes but she couldn't stop herself from hearing his mechanical grunts.

When it was over, Hayashi pulled up his pants as if nothing had happened and walked away, followed by his men. Silver threw herself down next to Luna's discarded figure, and some girls rushed to get rags to bind Stoney's head together. The sound of their crying faded in and out of Jade's ears. She realized she'd been carrying the basket of watermelon all along, which she set down carefully—although no one would eat it, no one would eat anything for a while. It didn't seem possible they could ever go back to playing games and reading poetry in that courtyard. The edges of her vision seemed to come unstitched, and her weak knees finally gave out. Jade passed out unnoticed by anyone, a pool of black-red blood drenching the ground beneath her hand.



# 3

## Something to Remember When You're Down

1918

**AFTER THAT NIGHT, JADE HAD TO KEEP HER LEFT HAND BOUND IN LINEN** for close to a month. When the dressing was removed, nothing was different in her except a long, dark-red line on her left palm that eventually faded to white. But Luna was changed. She could no longer torment anyone, and inspired no fear, only pity. She didn't come out of her room for any reason. Silver herself carried in trays piled with Luna's favorite dishes or fresh melons, and brought them back out a few hours later, mostly untouched. Jade lurked outside the chamber and offered to watch over Luna, but Silver refused all help and continued her vigil alone.

During this time, everyone said Luna would be fine and that Stoney would die. Luna was young, and though she was injured, it wouldn't kill her. But Stoney's head had split, and he'd gone into a stupor. The old herbalist said he probably wouldn't wake up again at his age, and that if he by chance regained consciousness, he would be an even more useless creature, unable to walk or even relieve himself without help. At that, Silver tossed a coin at the herbalist

and told him to never set foot in her house again. She took to caring for Stoney herself, changing his clothes and bathing him with towels. Then one day when Silver went to see him, he was awake, waiting for her. Within a week he could sit up, and then the following week he stood up and went to the outhouse by himself, though later they found him immobile on the ground, halfway to his room. The women carried him back, and he lay still for days.

The story of what happened had gotten around town, and some people said that it was a shame Stoney failed to protect his young mistress, that between the two of them it would be better losing a deaf servant than a young beauty just beginning to bloom. But Stoney, not being able to hear these opinions, eventually recovered most of his strength.

**LYING IN HER BED** for such a long time, Luna drifted in and out of sleep until she stopped distinguishing between her thoughts and her dreams. She remembered a story her mother used to tell her: a long time ago, there lived in the mountains a bear and a tiger. Both wanted to become human, so they prayed to the heavens and were told that they would transform if they stayed in a cave for one hundred days, eating only a bundle of wormwood and twenty cloves of garlic. The tiger eventually gave up and ran out of the cave—becoming so near to humans in intelligence and emotion, though still a beast in form. The bear persevered alone and turned into a beautiful woman on the hundred and first day. But the bear-woman wanted, most of all, to have a child. So she prayed again, and this time the son of heaven himself came down and lay with her. The child that the bear-woman bore became the first king of Korea.

As long as she could remember, Luna had heard dozens of stories like these about women who desperately longed for children. Such tales never told of women who didn't want to become mothers, although there were plenty of these among courtesans, servants, unmarried girls, widows, and matrons who already had too many mouths to feed. These women also had to pray and eat bitter herbs to get their wish.

A while back, a fourteen-year-old girl who did their washing had become pregnant and begged Silver for help. She didn't have any money to go to an herbalist, and at any rate she couldn't be caught buying something that would ruin her chances of marriage forever. Courtesans, of course, had the "medicine" in stock at all times. Luna had watched carefully as the maid prepared the bitter-smelling brew. Thick curls of cloudy steam overflowed from the bowl that the girl gulped down—almost greedily, Luna had thought at the time. This was what she now had to re-create.

Once she made up her mind, she rose from her bed quietly so as to not wake Silver. Her legs were weak and spindly under her weight, but she made it to the kitchen somehow. The herbs were still tucked in a bronze pot in the corner. Luna boiled water in a clay pot and let the herbs simmer until the liquid turned dark brown and thick. It tasted like woodsy bile.

Luna lay back down in her cot and waited for the medicine to take hold. She had only missed one period, but she could already feel something sharp and pointy in her womb that was never there before. That this seed was like an evil nail didn't surprise her in the least; it was to be expected from a man like Hayashi. The air was beginning to feel unbearably hot. And instead of flushing the nail out, the medicine seemed to make it grow larger, tearing her from the inside. Her mother was awake now, holding her hand and taking her temperature. She wanted to feel the blood rush out between her legs, but the nail was stuck inside her. If she could have spoken out loud, she would have asked someone to please scratch it out of her body, but she couldn't utter a word, as if caught in a bad dream.

When Luna woke up, it was nighttime—she had been in a fever for a whole day. Silver was sitting up next to her, and the darkness under her eyes showed she hadn't slept at all.

"You're too young to remember this. I also didn't want Lotus, and the brew didn't work for me either," Silver said.

"I was livid the entire time I was pregnant. Even after she was born I could hardly stand her. But before she was even two months old, she looked right into my eyes and smiled. Even though I was

sure she knew in my womb how much I hated her.” She paused, and saw that Luna was too silent and tense to be asleep.

“And at that moment, I held her tightly to my chest and cried like I would flood the world. Such a little body, still red from being inside mine. I kept saying like a madwoman, ‘Please forgive me.’ I’d tried to get rid of her but her soul had clung to me by a thread. It’s an uncanny thing—*inyeon*. If it’s not meant to be, you can’t hold on to people no matter how hard you try. Some people you love deeply will turn into a stranger in an instant, if the *inyeon* has run its course. And sometimes people will be attached to you forever despite all likelihood. Lotus and I, our *inyeon* is deep and goes back further than this life.

“I will do anything for Lotus just as I’ll do anything for you. You’re both my daughters. So I promise you, you don’t know yet how you’ll feel later.”

**DESPITE THE BLAZING SUN** and resinous air, Silver went out all the way across town to send a telegram to Seoul. The reason for her errand became clear when a visitor appeared at their door—a courtesan as beautiful as Silver, but dressed in simpler and more expensive clothes. Her inky black hair was scalloped around her forehead and coiled on her nape in the Western style. Instead of silk-and-leather slippers embroidered with flowers, she had on heeled pumps with straps over dainty silk stockings that only white women wore. Silver’s first cousin was named YeDan, although friends and admirers called her Dani. She would take Luna to Seoul, ostensibly so she could have a fresh start. But everyone knew the real reason she was being sent away was to keep Hayashi from discovering her condition.

Lotus was being sent to Seoul as well, but she refused to leave unless she could take her closest friend with her. Silver had arranged to pay for the board of her two daughters so that they would be exempt from paying back the mistress of the establishment, as was customary. Jade, on the other hand, was an investment for which Silver had already paid a substantial sum, and her transfer was

therefore a more delicate matter. Still, Dani agreed to take a look at the child, who was summoned after dinnertime.

"How old are you?" Dani asked, her sharp and beautiful eyes tracing the girl from the head to the hem of her skirt.

"I'm ten, Madame," Jade answered softly, focusing her gaze on Dani's freshly painted, scarlet lips. Silver and other courtesans wore rouge too, but Dani was the only woman she'd ever seen whose makeup was not just an ornament, but an effect; the color of her lips alone could make you feel as if she were tenderly caressing you, or—if she wanted—as if she were slapping your face. She pulled out a cigarette from an enameled case and rested it between gently parted lips while lighting it with one hand in a single fluid motion. Her manners and diction were impeccable, but an air of subversion trailed her like perfume. Dani defied simple categorization like no one else—and that was her most attractive quality.

"Let me see your eyes," Dani said, removing the cigarette from her lips. A soft white smoke curled around her mouth before departing into the air. Jade lifted her gaze and met Dani's irises, nearly black and foiled with flashes of golden brown.

"She is pretty, and quite bright, too," Silver said. "She won't be able to work for a while yet, but she'll still be useful to have around."

Dani turned toward her friend. Even the way she cocked her head to the side and opened up her elbow was languorously elegant, Jade thought.

"She looks like she would be a quick learner, as you say. Her eyes are not half bad. She is prettier than your Lotus, to be honest," Dani said with frankness, as if Jade weren't standing right in front of her.

"Lotus doesn't really take after me," Silver said, wounded.

"No question about it. Luna, that poor thing, is your exact copy though. This girl isn't a standout like Luna, but she has fine features, I'll admit. Intelligent eyebrows, full lips . . . But I don't think I'll take her, after all. She's too delicate. Weak, and I don't mean just in the physical sense. Worse than that, she doesn't have any personality—and you know how I dislike bland girls from the country." Dani shook her head.

"Jade has personality!" Silver exclaimed, looking earnestly at the girl, as if saying, Go ahead and show her your appealing side. The command didn't produce the desired effect; under the glare of two imperious women, Jade felt about as animated as a millstone.

"These are some bad times, Sister. There's no grain in the countryside, you know that. Every week I get at least five girls at my door. Their parents beg me to take them for nothing more than a small sack of rice. Even in their mud-stained rags, some are much prettier than this Jade. I refuse them all." Dani leaned back and crossed her arms, as though signaling the discussion was over.

"She's the best girl in class for poetry—recites classic verses like a little oriole. You should see her when she's playing with her mates in the courtyard. Very charming," Silver soldiered on.

"Forgive me, but little charming acts don't impress me as a proof of any originality. This child, I'm sure, is adorable when she plays, but I'm not just looking for liveliness. Now your second daughter, she has spirit! She does take after you, just not in looks . . ." Dani laughed, but Silver's face remained somber.

"I think you're being too harsh, Dani. Jade is only ten, after all. Children completely change a dozen times a year when they're growing," Silver said. "All I can say is, she is a good one. I've also seen my share of people to know what I'm talking about."

Dani cocked her beautiful face and made a slight noise that sounded like *hrumph* to Jade. She tried to project that special quality that Dani was looking for, perhaps an air of effortless joy that Lotus so easily radiated. But while Jade wasn't prideful, she couldn't force a smile while being dressed down like this. A tiny tear was threatening to escape out of her right eye and she focused on putting it back in its place.

"Well, my dear sister," Dani sighed. "Honestly, I don't know if she has what it takes to make a living as a courtesan. She doesn't have sensuality, and what else do men want, really? On the other hand, she's too refined to make a great washing girl. She's a little in-between, don't you agree? But you're my cousin and my oldest friend. I will take her as an apprentice, if that would please you," she

said, turning away from Jade and dismissing her with a cavalier wave.

Jade backed out of the room and ran to tell this news to Lotus. She didn't understand why Dani didn't care for her while valuing Lotus—or why the reverse was true of Silver. It was strange to think that her best friend had a special quality that she lacked, although she was prettier and understood literature. Instead of being crushed, she felt relief at the confirmation that they were perfect counterparts. She—observant, intelligent, and hardworking; her friend—spirited, disarming, and confident. They would never compete for the same hearts or the same happiness, as might happen to two friends who are too alike. Jade felt that they each would have only half of a life, a single wing, which would not be truly complete unless they stood together side by side.

**WHEN THEY GOT ON THE TRAIN,** Dani picked out a pair of seats facing one another at the end of the car. None of them spoke as the fields whipped past in a blur. A flock of sparrows seemed to follow them for a while, and then fell back as if exhausted.

"We are going faster than the birds!" Lotus half whispered, half exclaimed. Dani smiled indulgently. It was already clear to all that Dani doted on Lotus for her unflappable personality and Luna for her looks and tragedy. Jade felt less hurt than embarrassed to notice herself at the end of the line for her affections.

"You've never been on a train before, right? Wait till we get to Seoul, you'll see so many things you've never imagined even in your dreams," Dani said. "Hey, look outside for a second."

Dani paused, and the girls whipped their heads to the window, where the pearly sun was already halfway down the opaque, moist summer sky. "This railroad doesn't just go between Pyongyang and Seoul. It stretches all the way south to the tip of the peninsula, and all the way north to Uiju, where you can take the western route to Beijing, then Shanghai; or go north to Manchuria, Siberia, and eventually Europe! Wouldn't that be a sight to see?"

"What would be the point of going so far? It's uncivilized," Lotus said, sounding unexpectedly like her mother. But Jade noticed how

Luna's face briefly lightened at the mention of the West of the Ocean. Next to her, Dani was staring willfully at the horizon, as though she could fly through the window by the force of her beautiful, opinionated eyes.

As for herself, Jade didn't know whether she'd like going anywhere. The occasion to wonder this had never arisen before, and her mind always drew a blank when it came to uncertainties. Even worse, she was not even naturally curious: the books she liked best didn't teach her something new, they talked of things that she already understood just in a more beautiful way. Her imagination ran its circular course inside familiarities—a fountain rather than a river, particularly when it came to thinking about her own life. What else could she become besides what others wanted her to be? She was certain that Dani's imagination would have been an entire sea even as a young girl. Jade guessed that she would not grow up to be half as splendid as Dani—and worse, that Dani thought this too.

At sundown, the train slowly rolled into Seoul station like a tired horse returning to the stable. Once they walked out, the soupiness of the air suddenly intensified, glowing orange and violet over the sprawling unknown. Jade was struck most of all by the strangeness of the people crowding around her. Of course, people in PyongYang were also unfamiliar to her, but as a group she'd recognized their looks, sounds, and expressions on their faces; she'd felt safe in their company. The collective of strangers in Seoul had a different aura, more self-possessed, purposeful, and indifferent, not unlike Dani herself. They impatiently sidestepped the girls and flooded the large square in front of the station where street vendors and rickshaw drivers vied for attention. Beyond this, there was a huge, freestanding stone arch topped with a blue-black tiled roof. Small stores and odd buildings huddled on its sides like puppies.

"That's the Great South Gate," Dani pointed out, when they'd gotten on a rickshaw. "It was built more than five hundred years ago into the walls of the castle, which were still there when I first came to Seoul. It was a sight to behold, back then. The Japanese knocked off the walls long ago. And none of those unsightly electric poles used to be there, either."



The rickshaw driver started jogging, and the chaos of the station gradually receded.

"Are we going to go through the gate?" Jade asked, speaking up for the first time since leaving home.

"Why, of course we are," Dani said. "A gate doesn't cease to be a gate just because there are no walls around it. How else would you know you've arrived in Seoul?"

"And besides, there's nothing like going through an arch to raise your spirits. Just remember that when you're down," she said gleefully. Her ability to find strangely uplifting things was another one of her peculiar talents. "Here we go—you'll see what I mean!"

And Jade did shiver with an inexplicable elation as the rickshaw passed under the arch and came out on the other side.

# 4

## The Orphan

1918

**EARLIER ON THE SAME DAY WHEN THE GIRLS ENTERED THE CITY, A BOY** had also gone through the Great South Gate. The night before, he'd parted ways with some traveling merchants who had taken him in for a few weeks in exchange for carrying a pack and running small errands. They had given him two pennies, enough for sleeping in a communal room at the inn and a bowl of broth. Instead, he headed to a ditch by the side of the road just outside the Gate, resolving to eat only when he no longer had any strength left. Once he found a rounded groove on the ground, he curled himself on his side and hugged his knees to the chest. As if they'd been waiting for him, soft strands of green foxtail gently bent over him like a coverlet. The boy looked sideways up at the sky, which was richly black and resplendent with stars.

His father had been a man of few words, but before he died, he'd said that looking at the sky could make you fearless against anything. He had been a formidable hunter, but toward the end of his life he couldn't walk out of his room. No matter what, take care of your sisters, he'd said, lying helplessly in his cot. Only the sprig of gray hair stood out from the rest of his body, which was as thin as a

shadow. You're the head of the family now. If you need courage, just look at the sky.

When the stars went to bed, the boy awoke to the smell of the sun warming up the earth. He rubbed his eyes and crawled out from the ditch to get his first good look at the city, which was then drenched in liquid orange light. Summer dawn in Seoul was electrifying but short, almost nonexistent. The scorching sun hurled itself above the horizon, drying the dewdrops in seconds, and the city rose up as if obeying its commands. Already, there was a line of carts, travelers, and laborers entering and leaving the Great South Gate. The boy cautiously joined the crowd going into the city. No one questioned his presence or even looked at him. He safely snuck underneath the cool shade of the arch and came out on the other side, to a wide road buzzing with streetcars and lined with tall, stately buildings in Western style. And though weak with hunger, he couldn't help but smile. He reached for the drawstring pouch in his pocket and gave it a friendly squeeze, feeling the two pennies, a silver ring, and a cigarette case inside.

There were many mansions on both sides of the avenue that he thought were Christian houses, though in fact most belonged to government offices, consulates, and trading companies. On the streets, Koreans in white mixed with the Japanese in black. Then there were officers in uniform on horseback, around whom all the others swiveled past with discreet self-consciousness like schools of fish around patrolling sharks. The boy even caught sight of a couple of white men, their long, powerful legs sticking out of a rickshaw that was being pulled by a thin older man. Sweat dripped down from under his head scarf along his earthy face, and landed with a splash on the yellow dirt road or on top of his own feet. The image of his father came into the boy's mind, even as the rickshaw sped away from him and disappeared into the crowd.

The sun was beating down hard already, and his throat was dry to the point of closing up. He swallowed a few times, but barely a drop of spit went down his throat. Before he could do anything else, he would need to find water. In every country hamlet, there was a well near the village tree where the women came to fetch water for

the day. One only had to look for the tallest tree or follow wherever girls were headed, balancing a large clay jug on their heads. Here, there were no trees anywhere, just endless streets filled with every type of human being except young girls fetching water. He spotted a matron carrying a basket nearby, and caught up to her.

"Excuse me, Aunt, where can I get some water?" His words came out dry and rusty as nails, and the woman went on her way without even slowing down for a moment. The next two people he approached also kept walking as though they hadn't heard him. He had thought that the latter, who looked like a university student, would surely stop and say something. When the youth also coldly passed him by, the boy felt all the blood rush down from his head, making it hard to stay on his feet. He found a piece of shade under the eaves of a building and plopped down on his bottom, making no effort to soften his landing—so drained was he of any energy. He pressed the heels of his hands into his eyes. One of the traveling merchants had done so when he was especially tired, and the gesture had impressed the boy as soothing, but not shameful or childish.

"You from the country?"

The boy put his hands down and looked up to see another boy around his age.

"I'm not," the boy instinctively lied.

"What's your name?"

"Nam JungHo."

"Ha, you're a country bumpkin all right. Who gives out his name to a stranger like that, except rustics who just passed through the gate that day?"

"How old are you, you little shit?" JungHo said. "You talk like you're itching for a beating." JungHo was only twelve, but he'd already had a reputation for being the best fighter among the village urchins back home. While small-boned, he was wiry and quick. Moreover, he wasn't at all afraid of pain and only cared about how much he could beat up his opponent, which was how he defeated boys bigger and older than he was.

"You crack me up. You look like you haven't eaten for days. You're so weak you can barely stand up," the city boy sneered.

In the blink of an eye, JungHo was standing with balled-up fists raised over his chin, ready to strike. The city boy was taller than JungHo, but only by a few inches.

"I was only joking," the city boy said, quickly changing his tone. "You don't need to get so riled up."

"Just leave me alone, you shitty dog," JungHo said quietly, with his fists still up. "Leave me in peace!"

"Hey, I'll leave you alone. But you look like you need some water or food, or something," the city boy said. "I'll show you where to get water, if you come with me."

"I bet you're lying," JungHo said.

"If it turns out I lied, you can always beat me up then, right?" the city boy said, smiling.

"What's your name?"

"They call me Loach."

"That's a stupid name," JungHo said sternly. But they started walking together, nevertheless. Loach was good at weaving through the crowd moving in all different directions, without ever stopping or losing his way—just like his namesake animal.

"How much farther?" JungHo couldn't help himself from asking.

"Just a little more," was all Loach would say.

At first, JungHo tried to remember the turns they took, as to be able to retrace his steps back to the Great South Gate; but he eventually gave up, as knowing his location only in relation to that one place was pointless. Whether or not he stayed on track, he still didn't know where anything was, and thus was essentially lost. The storefronts with their signs in Chinese characters, the *whoosh* of rickshaws, shouts of vendors, street performers, and even a streetcar threaded with an electric wire at the top and brimming with people crowded around him on all sides, exhausting his senses. To keep himself steady, he glued his eyes to Loach's slender back and the arrowhead-shaped sweat mark spreading slowly from its center.

"Here we are." Loach turned around and smirked, pointing forward.

“Hmm?”

They’d arrived at the edge of a canal—though it had nothing in common with the energetic, fresh streams around JungHo’s village at the foot of the mountains. The swampy, shallow rivulet flowed about five yards below street level, its pebbled banks on either side lined with a levee of rocks and cement. Loach was pointing at a stone bridge just ahead, groaning under a heap of carts and pedestrians.

“What’s this, stupid?” JungHo asked, not bothering to hide his frustration. “You said there would be water.”

“It’s under the bridge,” Loach said, not missing a beat.

“That muddy water? You think I’m a dog?”

“Don’t get so fiery all the time, it’s fucking hot as it is. I live under the bridge,” Loach responded. Then without waiting for more retorts, he said, “Either you follow me or just go back wherever you came from, country bumpkin.” He crouched down, put his palms at the edge of the levee, then lightly swung his legs over the ledge and dropped down. JungHo hurried over and leaned out; Loach was already straightening himself up and dusting off his hands.

“Son of a bitch,” JungHo whispered to himself, before dropping off the ledge.

“What took you so long? Not so brave now, are we?” Loach teased. “We’re almost there.”

Contrary to JungHo’s hopes, the presence of water did nothing to cool the air as they walked together to the bridge. As they got closer, JungHo noticed a cluster of trash, which turned out to be makeshift tents. Several boys their age were sitting on large rocks nearby, talking among themselves, and then stood up to greet Loach. They were the kind of dirty that makes one’s skin crawl and scalp itch just from looking.

JungHo tried to hide his unease as they made their way to the tents. The worst thing he could do at this point was to run away. He wouldn’t make it up the levee, and they would swarm him in an instant. But if they thought he wasn’t intimidated, he might still be fine.

"Who is this, Loach?" one of the boys asked. He was the tallest among them, and had the distinction of being the only one with a smattering of gray fuzz over his upper lip.

"A new guy, fresh from the country," Loach said. "Hey, he's dying of thirst. Get him some water." There was a brief squabble among the boys over who should get it, but eventually one of them fetched a bowl from a tent and handed it to JungHo.

"Drink it, country bumpkin," Loach said. "It's well water."

Once reassured, JungHo quickly lifted the bowl to his lips and gulped the water down, feeling their eyes on him the entire time.

"Feel better?" Loach asked, smirking, once JungHo lowered his bowl. He nodded.

"What's your name?" asked the tall one with the faint mustache.

"Nam JungHo. What's your name?" JungHo asked, calling him "you" in the familiar form, as if they were the same age.

"Mind your manners, you've just had our water . . . My name is YoungGu. But you're going to call me Older Brother."

JungHo didn't say anything, and YoungGu carried on.

"Which province are you from? And why did you come to Seoul?"

"I'm from PyongAhn province. And I came here for the same reason anyone comes to Seoul," JungHo said. "There is nothing to eat in the countryside anymore."

"What about your family?"

JungHo considered for a moment. After his father's death, a widower had come forward asking for his pretty older sister's hand in marriage. The man had offered to take in even JungHo's younger sister, but not himself. A five-year-old sister-in-law to feed was one thing, and a boy nearly all grown was quite another. Since his older sister would have refused the offer and starved together rather than abandon him, he had fled quietly in the middle of the night.

JungHo replied, "All dead."

"Then today is your lucky day," YoungGu said. "You become one of us, and you won't have to worry about starving to death. We eat little enough, but we share everything."

"We're all orphans like you," Loach chimed in helpfully.

"How do you find stuff to eat?" JungHo asked.

"We beg, we steal—don't worry, we only steal from the bad guys. You'll get the hang of it. But first things first," YoungGu said. "You have to swear an oath of loyalty, and surrender any money you've got."

"I don't have any . . ." JungHo started to protest, instinctively reaching for his drawstring pouch—and then panicked, realizing that it was gone.

"I have it, country bumpkin," Loach said, holding up the pouch. "You know, I could've just taken this and lost you in the crowd. Instead I brought you here, where we live. So don't look so fucking hurt, moron."

Loach tossed the pouch to YoungGu, who caught it with one hand. JungHo stood shaking in anger as the older boy opened the pouch and pulled out its contents. He immediately pocketed the two pennies, but held up the silver ring and the cigarette case in each hand.

"You can have the money. But not those two things," JungHo said. His heart was pounding. "Give them back to me."

"Do you think I'm crazy? Why would I give these back?" YoungGu snorted. "These are rich people's things. You stole them, didn't you?"

"My father gave me those before he died," JungHo said. Truthfully, he had found them under his father's pillow after he passed away, but he figured that was the same thing, since he was his father's only son and heir. They were his not because they were worth money, but because they were heirlooms.

"You don't get it, do you." YoungGu smirked. "Maybe you haven't felt real hunger yet, or maybe you're just that stupid, but these things won't keep you alive when you're lying in a ditch somewhere, waiting for death. On the other hand, if we sell these we could all eat until we're full." In spite of his swagger, YoungGu's last words tumbled out with a hint of genuine longing.

"I don't care if you all starve—I don't want to join you," JungHo said. "Now give it back!"

YoungGu laughed heartily, and then all the other boys joined in.

"You can leave, no one will stop you. But you're not getting these back. You really are a simpleton even to ask. Let this be your first



lesson in Seoul," YoungGu said.

In a flash, JungHo raised his fists up to his chin, ready to fight. The other boys stopped laughing, and even YoungGu erased the smile from his face. He put the trinkets back inside the drawstring pouch and tossed it back to Loach for safekeeping.

The other boys, as if on cue, backed off one or two steps and widened the circle, as YoungGu and JungHo drew closer together. The air simmered with the hungry, gnawing energy of pubescent boys. Within that tension, there was a brief moment in which they both left the muddy canal strewn with rubbish, the dank shadow of the bridge, and the heartless city above them. YoungGu went to a mud hut where he was born and raised, less than half a mile from that spot. Disjointed memories of his mother's hand and the soft fur of his pet dog passed inexplicably through his mind, and he was filled with a sense of comfort. JungHo blocked out everything around him, even YoungGu, even his own physical body already beaten by exhaustion. In that split second before the first punches were thrown, he simply looked up at the sky, which glowed a violent yellow from the late afternoon sun. It offered him no comfort, nor courage, as his father had promised. But he thought that his father and mother were up there somewhere, that he didn't come into the world alone, and so was reminded why he must keep surviving as best he can as he sprang forward with a punch to YoungGu's head.

YoungGu easily dodged JungHo's fist and countered with his own attack, which the smaller boy sidestepped. For the next few minutes, they sized each other up, swiping and blocking, but from a safe distance. Then JungHo hurled himself forward with his fist aimed at YoungGu's stomach. Because JungHo had bent himself slightly at the waist, his head was now the perfect height for YoungGu to knock out with a punch. But just as the older boy confidently threw his fist, JungHo ducked under the arm and rammed his head as hard as he could into YoungGu's middle, felling him like a tree. JungHo knew that any advantage a taller boy has is eliminated once they're on the ground, and that whoever manages to pin the other down will almost always win no matter what size. The moment YoungGu was knocked out, more by surprise than anything else, JungHo straddled

his chest and punched his head savagely and repeatedly with both fists. YoungGu quickly grabbed JungHo's scrawny wrists, shrieking in real anger this time: "You little shit! You little shit!" Just at that moment, JungHo pulled his head back, then rammed it with all his strength into YoungGu's forehead. YoungGu screamed out in pain, but JungHo—without even blinking—smashed his head against YoungGu's once more, even harder this time. The older boy let go of JungHo's wrists and lay limply, bleeding quietly. Only then did JungHo get up, wiping his own blood-smeared forehead with the back of his hand.

"Give me back my things," he said to Loach, who tossed the drawstring pouch back to him.

JungHo dug into YoungGu's pocket for the two pennies and added those to the pouch as the other boys silently watched. He started walking out from under the bridge, intending to find a crevice in the levee that would be easier to climb. But when he'd gone about a minute, there was a sound of footsteps running after him, and a shout.

"Hey! Stop there!" It was Loach's voice.

"What do you want?" JungHo snarled. "You want a beating as well?"

"Don't go," Loach said. "Don't you realize what's happened?" He took a moment to catch his breath, then blurted out, "You just beat up our chief. That means you're the chief now."

JungHo snorted. "I don't want to be your chief. Let YoungGu enjoy lording it over you and all his underlings. I want no part in it."

"That's not how it works!" Loach insisted. "Fine, you don't want to join us? How are you going to survive out there on your own? Do you think we're the only band of beggars in Seoul? There are many even in this one district, and then there are real gangs of grown-up criminals—do you think they'd let you live?"

"What's that to you?" JungHo shouted. "If I die, then I die. You don't get a say in it!"

"You are such a hothead. I'm only trying to help," Loach said. "If you want to live, you have to stick with a group. And if you're the chief, you can do anything you want. You can order the other boys

to give you a big share and not even have to beg on the streets yourself."

"How can you say this, when just a few minutes ago you were YoungGu's right-hand man?" JungHo asked scornfully.

"I'm no one's right-hand man," Loach snorted. "I do what I can to survive. If you weren't such a bullheaded idiot, you'd do the same."

The two boys locked eyes for a moment. Loach had smiled while leading him to their den, and had smiled while stealing his money. He was one of those boys with small, tadpole-shaped eyes whose easy, cheap smiles for anyone and everyone made them inscrutable and loathsome. As JungHo's mind arrived at this conclusion, he suppressed an overwhelming urge to give Loach a nasty black eye. But it was undeniable that the city boy hadn't directly lied or intended him harm, and in this case, was telling the truth about the necessity of sticking together.

In the next instant, Loach extended his hand. JungHo took it without even knowing why—then surprised himself by shaking it up and down a few times, before they both dropped their hands as though embarrassed.

"Come on, let's go," Loach said. "Pretty soon, the kids who went out will come back. We have acrobats, pickpockets, straight-up beggars. Hopefully we'll have made enough today for some supper."

"What do you guys eat normally?" JungHo couldn't help but ask, filled with curiosity and hope.

"Stew, or potatoes if we're lucky. Old fish, things like that."

"I could really use some stew. I haven't eaten anything in more than a day," JungHo said, and even as he spoke he felt ashamed at revealing himself.

"Me neither. But you only really need to eat every other day. My mother used to tell me that," Loach said with another easy smile. This time, it didn't seem so contemptible in JungHo's eyes.

# 5

## The Friend from Shanghai

1918

**EVERY HUMAN BEING FUNDAMENTALLY BELIEVES IN HIS OR HER UNIQUE** and inherent significance, without which life would be unbearable; but in Kim SungSoo's psyche, that belief was not merely a foundation but the *pièce de résistance*. He himself was not conscious of that fact, of course, since such people are precisely the least likely to admit to selfishness. Being a well-educated, modern man, he had his own code of conduct and was sufficiently pleased with himself for meeting it without too many difficulties. That is to say, he was pro-independence but against any form of native activism (change could only come top-down through imploring the United States to free Korea, he believed). Among friends, he would say aptly vitriolic comments about the oppression, enjoying the eloquence of his own speech and the smooth taste of his Japanese cigarettes. He could carry on love affairs that were physically, financially, and sometimes even emotionally involving; but he wouldn't be so base as to flaunt them in front of his wife, subjecting her to needless humiliation. In short, his moral character was no worse than any other Korean male who is born the only son of a

prominent landowning family with an annual income of nearly two hundred thousand won.

When Kim SungSoo was young, his father was known around the entire province simply as “Rich Man Kim,” and he himself was called “Little Master,” not only by their own servants but also by peasants for miles around and in neighboring villages. Like all sons of wealthy landlords, he was sent away to Seoul for high school, followed by university. He was betrothed and married at twenty, to an official’s daughter who had only recently graduated from a Christian women’s college. They lived together for almost three years in the five-room guesthouse at his uncle’s mansion, across the courtyard from the main building. SungSoo spent those days mingling with his friends, all young men of wealth and education, and carousing with courtesans at expensive restaurants. At night, he came home senselessly inebriated to his wife, and let her undress him and gently admonish him. She’d been educated by American missionaries at school, but at home she’d also been taught that an ideal wife embraces her husband’s flaws with patience and self-sacrifice. But Kim SungSoo’s uncle, a government official who would eventually become a count in the wake of the Annexation in 1910, determined that his nephew couldn’t go on wasting away family fortune and his own talent, and had him sent to Japan for further studies.

SungSoo left his wife at home and arrived in Tokyo alone, and spent the next three years halfheartedly studying French, German, and Russian literature. When he wasn’t reading Pushkin and Goethe he was in the company of other expat students, many of whom were as carefree as he was. The others who were earnest and occupied with political theories, sovereignty, and equality, he avoided without even being conscious of it; one was too tiresome, another was truculent, and still another was unsophisticated and had no appreciation for culture. Yet, SungSoo had unexpectedly become close with a student of the political circle, as one sometimes picks out and strikes up a friendship with only a single person out of a group that he otherwise scorns. This student had impressed SungSoo with his uncommon intelligence, illustrious family background, and—something that helped sort their relationship time

and again—genuine humility. Such was the history between Kim SungSoo and his old friend Lee MyungBo.

After SungSoo returned to Seoul, MyungBo stayed in Tokyo for another year. He then moved on to Vladivostok, continued westward across Manchuria, and settled semipermanently in Shanghai. SungSoo had lost touch with his friend six or seven years previously, and had not thought of him even in his private unspoken thoughts for so long that it jolted him when out of the blue he received a letter from MyungBo asking him to meet. After the initial surprise, however, SungSoo regained his composure and warmed himself to the idea of reuniting with his friend, until he became genuinely excited.

On the appointed day, SungSoo woke up and washed his face with hot water, made ready for him by the old woman who served the family as a housekeeper. He shaved carefully, then put on a crisp white shirt that his wife had ironed and laid out for him. The smartly creased sleeves cracked open as he pushed his arms through them, a distinct sensation that he greatly enjoyed. When he was fully dressed, his wife appeared with his breakfast, consisting of a bowl of white rice, fried fish, soybean sprout soup, kimchi, and steamed eggs with fermented shrimp.

“Did you sleep well?” she asked in a friendly voice as she laid down the tray. He grunted in reply. She chattered about their son, who had again gotten himself in some sort of trouble at school, and their infant daughter, who she suspected might have contracted the chickenpox. To all of these domestic issues, SungSoo paid only the slightest attention. It often felt to him as though his children belonged more to his wife than to himself; he was disappointed by how little affection he naturally had for them, and suspected that his attitude toward them was an extension of how he felt about his wife, their mother. The other three got along imperfectly, but with perfectly natural, warm, and even passionate attachment to one another. It was as if SungSoo had been dropped into a picture of an actual, real family lacking just a father figure. He often felt as though he were playacting with someone else’s wife and children.

"That's all great," SungSoo replied, only half aware that his wife was talking about their daughter's rash. "I better get going."

It was one of those October mornings when the sky is brilliantly blue and the air is wonderfully fresh. From the roofs of houses to walled gardens and the streets, everything was washed clean and anointed by the cool golden light of autumn. Alone, SungSoo became conscious of his own healthy, vigorous body, sharply dressed in a charcoal suit that was made precisely for this weather and delivered to his house by his tailor only the previous week. His tie, and the starched collar to which it was pinned, the silk-backed waistcoat, the brimmed wool hat, and the polished shoes—everything was delightful. The streets of Jongno were particularly beautiful too, and where he'd only have noticed the peasants and laborers during the summer, without any beauty and unpleasant in the extreme, he now saw that the trees aflame with foliage were casting watery shadows over the avenue.

His mood stayed bright as he reached his office and settled into his work. First, his secretary, a young man from the country, eager to prove himself but with an oily brown face and mannerisms that were too rustic to make him a man of letters, brought a stack of the morning's newspapers and deferentially laid them across his desk. SungSoo skimmed them, starting with the important news in order to feel that he did the right thing, but losing interest and moving on before reaching the conclusion. There was an editorial piece on the second page about the riot that had broken out due to the skyrocketing price of rice, which had gone from fifteen won per eighty kilograms in January of the previous year to thirty-eight won this August. It was said that never before in Korea's five-thousand-year history had rice been so expensive, and the peasants and the laborers were starving en masse. On the day of the riot, a thousand men and women, young and old, had thrown mud and stones at the police armed with swords and rifles, right in the heart of Jongno, where SungSoo had just had such a nice walk in the morning. Finally, the military troops were deployed to disperse the crowd, and hundreds were arrested—and now the editorial was pleading for the release of these rioters.

After dutifully gathering the main points from the editorial, SungSoo moved on to a novel that was being serialized and read it with a great deal more interest. The protagonist of the story was an upper-class, modern-educated man in his thirties, just like SungSoo and the author himself. At this point, the protagonist was in the middle of falling in love with his late best friend's widow, despite numerous complications owing to their other loyalties. Though SungSoo laid down the newspaper muttering, "What garbage! Disgusting rubbish!" he secretly was engrossed in the story, could not help anticipating the next installment, and longed to write something in a similar style.

Over the next few hours, he worked on editing a manuscript for his quarterly literary journal, for which he was the editor in chief. There was a short meeting with his publisher, who had some troubling news about the printing press in the basement floor of the office, where they produced their own magazine as well as other publishers' works and even brochures. Kim SungSoo had only barely sent out the publisher when his secretary knocked on his door and let in his friend Lee MyungBo.

"How long has it been? How long?" The two friends clasped their hands and kept loudly exclaiming over one another. When they were done, SungSoo shouted at his secretary to bring in coffee immediately, and then they both sat down with glowing faces.

"Why haven't you let me know you were in Seoul? I thought you were still in Shanghai," SungSoo said reproachfully.

"I've only just arrived. And I will be going back in a month or two," MyungBo replied, smiling.

"Well, you look great. That country suits you!" SungSoo laughed good-naturedly. But in fact, as his eyes adjusted to the difference between his memory and the figure before him, he was beginning to see that MyungBo had aged faster than himself, that his cheeks and chin looked dark even though it wasn't yet evening, and that his coat hung loosely on his shoulders. And this made SungSoo feel truly sorry for his friend, which then had the bizarre effect of brightening his mood, and making him feel healthier and stronger than ever.



The secretary hurriedly brought in two cups of coffee on saucers, and they took a minute to settle themselves over the drinks.

"You shouldn't flatter me like that. You're the one who looks so hale and hearty. I guess that's the thing when one is married to a good woman. How is my sister-in-law, by the way?" MyungBo asked, and SungSoo smiled at his using the friendly term "sister-in-law" to describe his wife, whom MyungBo had never even met.

"She is good, she's never not good," SungSoo said.

"And the children? How old are they now?"

"The boy is fifteen, and the girl just turned one."

And in this way, they spent the next half hour catching up with all the details of their lives, each other's families, mutual friends and acquaintances, SungSoo's publishing house, and a side venture he'd just begun.

"A bicycle shop!" MyungBo exclaimed. "How ever did you come up with that?"

"I always loved riding it, it's a favorite hobby of mine," SungSoo said. "But enough about me. What brings you here? No, let's discuss that over lunch. Aren't you hungry? I'll take you to a new restaurant that's just opened, called MyungWol. They do palace-style cuisine, seven or nine courses; it's very splendid."

For the first time, MyungBo's face became subtly opaque, as if concealing some displeasure. He said, "No, thank you, I'm not very hungry, and besides, it's so comfortable here."

"Are you sure? Please, it will be my treat," SungSoo implored. "You embarrass me by not allowing me to buy you lunch after all these years."

At that, MyungBo smiled and the chilliness disappeared from his face. He explained, "You're still as generous as I remembered. Even at school, when some of the others talked about you as if you were a spoiled rich kid, I always defended you, because I knew you are far kinder than people make you out to be."

"Oh, MyungBo. I don't know," SungSoo said, suddenly feeling deflated. "I'm not that kind. I don't do anything to deserve such praise."

"But what if you had the chance?" MyungBo asked excitedly. "What if you had the chance to prove your goodness, wouldn't you take the right path?"

"What do you mean? I don't understand . . ."

"Surely you know. Don't you see? The people are dying, SungSoo. The good, hardworking peasants, who have never done anything bad in their lives, because every single waking minute is spent trying to put some food on the table . . .

"Just outside this office, here in Jongno, the beating heart of Seoul—thousands of people standing up against the oppression, fighting with their bare hands, and you haven't noticed?" MyungBo's eyes glittered in a strange way. "Why is there no rice for them? You tell me."

"Because the prices are rising," SungSoo answered reluctantly.

"No—well, that's not the full answer. The prices are rising because the Japanese have proclaimed a census and measured every inch of Korea, and all the miserable illiterate peasants, who have no proof of ownership except ancestral and oral rights, woke up one morning and found that their land was no longer theirs. Any so-called unclaimed land, the government takes for itself, or sells to the grand landlords and the Japanese trading company. So, they go from small landowners to tenants under the great landowners, and after they pay off the taxes to the government, the rent for the land, fees for the tools, irrigation water, et cetera, et cetera, they no longer have any money to buy even their own food, and have to borrow from their landlords against the following year's crop, just to be able to secure the seeds. The cycle gets worse every single year, and they're sucked dry, down to their bones. Then, of course, the landlord makes them sign a communal contract so that if one tenant runs away, the other tenants of the village will have to pay off the remaining debt, so no one may dare escape, making them struggle in the same spot until they all die. Meanwhile, the great landowners, who control the vast majority of rice, see that the more they hold on to it, the higher the prices rise; and the higher the prices rise, the richer they become, so they keep their warehouses full to the top with sacks of grain, while everyone else is starving to death. Now,

can you tell me that you don't know what's wrong with this state of things!"

"It's not ideal, but what can I do? And besides," SungSoo said mildly, though not all in good faith, "you yourself are a son of a landowner. You have profited from your birth as much as I have. So what do you propose?"

"Great. I'm glad you asked me that," MyungBo said with a satisfied smile. "I can't, in good conscience, continue to benefit from a system that every part of my body and soul knows is immoral. When my father dies and the estate passes on to me, I will give half of it to the peasants who have always tended it, and sell the other half for the cause. Just now though, I'm not getting any money from my family, and it's been awfully difficult trying to sustain the movement in Shanghai on so little . . ."

"Goodness, is that why you came to visit me?" SungSoo asked. "Well, then, how much is needed?"

"You must first understand that this isn't for me. It is for the movement, feeding and clothing and training our brave young men in Manchuria, who would throw away their lives gladly for our country." MyungBo's face became red, and his eyes shined with tears. "I was thinking that a contribution of twenty thousand won would be most appropriate for a man of your stature."

"Twenty thousand won? My fellow, do you realize that's enough to buy twenty villas?" SungSoo exclaimed. "I know everyone thinks I'm so rich, but that's a lot of money even for me. I would have to think on it," he said, even though he already knew he would never give MyungBo that much, or even anything close; he had decided instantly, and only the reasoning was what he needed time to formulate.

"You are an artist, SungSoo . . . How can you close your heart to the rest of the world?" MyungBo muttered bitterly.

"On the contrary, it is *because* I am an artist that I must concern myself with art. Politics are the concern of politicians, like yourself," SungSoo replied. What was next? Was he supposed to feel sorry for the cows toiling in the fields? Each being had its place in the universe.

"Fine, then, I can't force you to do anything. Just think how much you spent setting up a house for that geisha in Tokyo, and what that money could have done for the young fighters who only ask for a gun and bullets to serve our country."

"Really, MyungBo, I need time to process all this." SungSoo suppressed his irritation as politely as he could. "It's too bad you didn't want to eat lunch, that we had to get into this talk without even a drop of liquor. But there, we had it all out, and now we can talk of something else."

"No, I see that I've made you uneasy. I'll get going now. But please, for all of our memories together, if you have even a bit of affection for me, would you think about it?"

"I promise, I promise," SungSoo said, and felt the most vivid relief as MyungBo put on his hat and walked out of the office.

\* \* \*

**DANI'S HOUSE WAS IN YEONGEON-DONG** near the ChangGyeong Palace Zoo, where many old and noble families had their ancestral homes. There was an excess of space: Dani alone occupied the ground floor of the two-story building, and there was even a charming pavilion across the courtyard. Each of the girls was given her own room on the second floor of the main house, where the maid and the housekeeper also slept. It was the finest home Jade had ever seen, filled with leather sofas, velvet curtains, and even a Steinway piano; and ensconced in the courtyard garden were strange and lovely plants from faraway places. With her characteristic poetic whimsy, Dani assigned flowers to each of the girls based on their qualities. Lotus was given summer sunflowers because they were bright, wholesome, and happy. Luna got Dani's favorite flowers, fall cosmoses, which she claimed were not much to look at singly but sublime when bunched together in a bouquet.

Jade was matched with the winter camellia, a southern-flowering tree that she had never seen in the frigid North. Dani assured her, somewhat more warmly than usual, that the camellia was a very lucky flower for a woman. Its mate was the lovely, pale green

camellia bird, which drank only its nectar and visited no other blossom. And at the end of its season, the camellia didn't brown or blow away petal by petal as other flowers do; it fell down unblemished and intact, bloodred and velvety like a heart. As beautiful on the ground as on the day it first opened. "What all women want—an unchanging love. It's what I see for you," Dani said with a curious smile. Jade thought that her foster aunt had an intuitive streak of a born creative, somewhere between the levels of an artist and a clairvoyant. Sometimes her aesthetic fancy could get carried away and take on the shape of a small prophecy. Whether or not Dani actually had a feeling for the future, her enthusiastic delivery was what made it feel real.

"But Aunt Dani, what kind of flower would *you* be?" Lotus asked.

"I know," Jade said before Dani could answer. "She could only be the regal spring rose." As if on cue, the two little girls linked hands and made a ring around Dani, and ran in a small circle shouting "Queen Rose! Queen Rose!" until she burst out laughing. But even in the height of their amusements, Jade felt guilty when she saw how Luna continued to stay quiet. Nothing seemed able to make her speak, smile, or even get angry and scold the little girls.

**ONE GRAY DAY IN EARLY FALL,** Luna finally broke her months of silence. The rain was falling softly, casting everything in indigo. The three girls crawled back into their cots after lunch and listened to the downpour in a state of melancholy. Jade begged their maid Hesoon to tell them stories of her childhood in Jejudo, the magical southern island where there were trees without any branches and wild horses running freely under a snowcapped mountain. Hesoon said her mother and her four sisters were all seawomen who dove in the water to harvest abalones, holding their breath for two minutes at a time.

"That's impossible, you're making it up!" Lotus giggled.

"It's all true. Jejudo women dive even when they're pregnant. My mother almost gave birth to me in the sea but she swam out just in time for me to be born on the beach. She caught me with her own hands and wiped me off with kelp," Hesoon said. She was always

telling these unbelievable stories, about mountains breathing fire and ice and long-winged birds that nested in the waves. When Jade closed her eyes, she could see women who turned to fish in the sea and babies rocked to sleep in the shallows, anchored in place by seaweed ropes.

When they were about to pepper the maid with more questions, Dani appeared at the door and feigned shock at their laziness.

"I know it's rainy today, but you girls can't just lie around all afternoon. When I was your age, I was the smartest student at my school—I even learned English! Come downstairs, and I'll teach you something fun."

By the time the girls came down to the sitting room, the sofa was pushed against one wall and Dani was putting on a record—a paper-thin, polished black disc that shone deliciously in the candlelight. It started spinning slowly on the turntable, filling the room with the warm syncopation of strings and trumpets. Jade closed her eyes, willing the wave of sound to sweep her out to sea.

"Isn't it wonderful? This is called a foxtrot." Dani beamed. "I wish I knew how to dance this one, but I didn't learn it in school. Hold on, I'll put on a waltz and teach you that."

Before long, they were all standing on tiptoe—Dani, Luna, Jade, Lotus, and even Hesoon—and dancing in circles around the sitting room, roaring with laughter. Jade noticed that for the first time in months, Luna's face was lighting up with a smile.

"Come into my room, girls," Dani said. "You can try on my clothes." Her words had the desired effect of driving up the merriment—Jade and Lotus screamed in joy, and even Luna couldn't resist putting on a priceless embroidered dress and twirling around. After they had exhausted themselves dancing, they lay down on the floor together in a heap of colorful silk skirts. They were only roused by the sound of wheels parting the mud-flooded street. Hesoon ran to the front gates, came back shivering from the rain, and announced, "Madame, His Honor is here."

"Did he send word earlier?" Dani asked, frowning. She immediately rose and started straightening her dress, while Hesoon

picked up around the room and the housekeeper corralled the girls and ushered them upstairs.

Jade lagged behind the others. Just before rounding the corner at the landing, she turned around and caught a glimpse of a gray-haired man being greeted by Dani. He had the proud bearing of a hale old age, but already seemed to show all the promises of the frailness to come in just five or six years. With his muddy complexion and soft voice, he was not someone Jade had imagined for her lovely and indomitable aunt, who seemed able to make any man fall obediently at her feet. So Dani was just as shrewd as the others in choosing money over feelings. Jade felt with a pang of disappointment that Dani was not, after all, a fantastical creature.

The following day, Dani began giving the girls lessons in music and dance. Lotus had struggled to pass the tests under her mother's tutelage; under Dani's guidance she gained enough confidence to discover, for the first time, a remarkable voice that seemed to emanate from her whole body rather than her throat. Luna was interested in learning English, which only upper-class women in the most modern families ever learned. Jade took to dance the way she did to poetry—she discovered that they both originated from the same unfathomable place. She could imitate any movement on the first try; on the second or third try, she made it her own by adding a slight twist of the torso, a tilt of her chin, or a simple breath where there was none. With those nearly imperceptible differences, other girls remained girls while she became a crane, a legendary heroine, a season, an idea. When this happened, Dani perched her chin on a cupped hand and narrowed her eyes severely—whether in approval or displeasure, Jade was never certain.

In October, Dani told the girls that they were to have a special outing. MyungWol, the new restaurant where she'd been booked almost every evening for a fortnight, had asked her and other courtesans in her guild to help advertise its opening in Jongno. She was bringing the two younger girls as well, though Luna couldn't go in her condition. New costumes were ordered for both Jade and Lotus, and they practiced their routine in their rooms every night before bed. Afterward, Jade felt the injustice of having to sleep

when there was so much to do, so much to think about; only after being thoroughly tortured by excitement was she able to fall into a restless slumber.

The week leading up to the appointed day was gray and drizzly, which made Jade miserable with worry. That morning, however, the sun rose brilliantly against a cloudless sky. The girls helped Dani cut the cosmoses in the garden before getting dressed, sharing Hesoon between them. Before fixing the embroidered headdress over the crown of Jade's head, the maid twisted her long braid into a low chignon and fixed it with a silver *binyuh* for the very first time. A bridal regalia. The updo marked her as a nonvirgin in status, if not in body. But she was different from normal married women: her wrap skirt opening on the right side indicated her profession. The last step in getting ready was the makeup. When it was finished, Jade saw in the mirror a beautiful stranger—red lips stark against the powdered skin—and was startled to realize that she looked very much like Dani.

"Goodbye, I will miss you," Jade whispered in the garden as Hesoon opened the gates. She was coming back in a few hours, but nothing would be the same as before. After being seen like this, she could never go back to being a marriageable girl in people's eyes. She had come into the house as a child, and was now stepping out of its gates as a courtesan.



# 6

## The Parade

1918

**AFTER MYUNGBO LEFT, SUNGSOO WAITED TEN MINUTES IN HIS OFFICE** before heading out himself. He did truly regret that the meeting with his old friend hadn't gone as he'd hoped; that instead of reminiscing about their old adventures over food and drink, and reveling in the discovery that someone else remembers you as you once were, and vice versa, they were each shocked at how different the other had become. It was far worse than meeting someone new and failing to like one another. Moreover, no one had called out SungSoo's faults to him in years. Everyone was eager to please him, his subordinates with deference, his peers with compliments, his wife with adoration. And this universal approval was so unconditional, and so much a part of his reality, that someone telling him to his face that he was wrong shook him to the core.

"Is he right? Am I wrong to not want to renounce my birthright, move to Shanghai, or some mountain village in Siberia, and spend my days target shooting and plotting assassinations?" SungSoo asked himself. He'd heard stories of how these young men—from wealthy and noble families, peasantry, or anywhere in between—gathered in safe houses in these places and swore an oath to give

up their lives for the cause. They cut off the tip of their ring finger and signed the pledges in blood, and wore sharply tailored suits and hats in the highest style in order to look dignified when they died, which may be at any moment. It was also said that women fell passionately in love with them.

"But for what? It is all foolish—nothing will be gained from it. Not only that, assassination is murder." This train of thought was beginning to soothe his angst. "We say the Japanese are murdering our people, but is the right answer murdering them in return? It's all so barbaric, and no less wrong. No, I won't contribute to such reckless violence. I won't be bullied into it, no matter how MyungBo judges me."

Having thus arranged his reasoning, SungSoo was satisfied. He nearly smiled with the increase in self-respect as he headed out to the streets. The sun was high in the cerulean sky, and there was a cool invigorating breeze. Before long he ran into a friend, a playwright who had also studied in Japan. SungSoo shook hands with him and brought up MyungBo, whom the playwright knew.

"How strange it is to see you both in one day," SungSoo said. Then, he discreetly communicated that MyungBo wasn't in good shape physically or financially, that he was in Seoul for a while to ask friends for money, and that SungSoo himself couldn't agree to it immediately—though he was thinking about it still. All of this, SungSoo made sure to skillfully convey without saying anything directly.

"You did right to refuse him," the playwright said. "I never could stand him. Thanks for the heads-up—if he asks to meet me, I'll come up with some excuse."

As they were thus catching up and walking, they noticed a throng of people just ahead, loudly shouting something.

"Oh goodness, is this another protest? We should take a different road," SungSoo said.

"I don't think so, that sounds like laughing. Maybe it's some show?" The playwright, who liked spectacles, started heading in that direction. As they approached they could see that the crowd was whooping and clapping at something in the middle of the boulevard.

They pushed their way to the front, and saw that it was a procession of about two dozen courtesans.

Each woman was dressed in a marvelous silk costume, tied together with a white sash that trailed behind them. On the sash was written the name of the courtesan and the name of the new restaurant MyungWol. Some of them carried baskets of flowers, and from time to time tossed a blossom at the adoring crowd.

"Incredible!" The playwright laughed. "How brilliant. MyungWol will be the talk of the town! We have to go there together soon."

SungSoo had always enjoyed the sight of beautiful women, and he watched the courtesans with great interest. Then, in surprise, he froze. In the middle of the procession was the familiar yet changed face of Dani.

At first, SungSoo could only process her appearance in comparison to the one in his memory. Her round face had thinned, and her features had become more prominent. Her powdered skin looked like polished marble, though it had once been as fresh and rosy as a spring dawn. Her black-lined eyes, sharp cheekbones, and painted red lips gave her a formidable air. It was undeniable that she no longer looked young. Only the lively expression of her eyes, which showed a glimpse of the mysterious garden within her and seemed capable of looking into anyone's soul, remained unchanged. But so, so unchanged! The moment he finally made that connection, he saw her as other people saw her: a resplendent woman against whom all other women simply paled.

How, in the seven years since coming back to Seoul, had he never seen her? The truth was that he'd long known she had become a courtesan, and a grand courtesan at that. In fact, it would have been impossible for him not to hear about her. In the capital, intellectuals, artists, writers, diplomats, and the like moved in just a few intricately connected circles, and they all loved beautiful courtesans, some more basely, and some more innocently. But, he admitted to himself, he had deliberately avoided running into her, and had stuck to parties where he knew she wouldn't be entertaining. In his mind he had thought that their relations were finished a long time ago, and that it was useless to dig up old bones

and try to make a broth out of them, so to speak. The best thing about the past was that it was behind you. So he never once wondered about her or indulged in fantasies of meeting her. Yet, when she was before his eyes, he suddenly felt troubled and did not know how to react.

"Have you met that one, Dani?" the playwright asked with a knowing smile, noticing SungSoo's gaze.

"I knew her a long time ago," he said. "She was a student back then."

"A student?" The playwright raised his eyebrows in disbelief.

SungSoo explained how Dani's mother—a celebrated courtesan herself—had retired when she became the second wife of an influential official.

"So a stepchild in a distinguished house. But if they sent her to school, why become a courtesan?" the playwright persisted.

SungSoo shrugged rather than implicate himself further in the story. He knew that Dani had been raised as a normal girl and was innocent when they met by chance in front of her school—she was never meant to become a courtesan. SungSoo had seduced her with implied promises and slipped away when he was called to study abroad. This had not troubled him, since he hadn't explicitly said, I will marry you. He could never have chosen anyone other than a woman of unimpeachable birth and wealth—a woman with a certain aristocratic blandness, like his dutiful and contented wife. If Dani hadn't realized that, it wasn't his fault.

"She's being kept by a very powerful protector, you know." The playwright gave the name of a Japanese judge near the very pinnacle of law, who had evidently set her up in a two-story house and even given her diamonds. "So if you're interested in her, you should know she is a forbidden fruit." The playwright winked. "As they say, you can see it, but you can't touch it. The good ones are always like that!"

"Oh, I wouldn't, anyway," SungSoo said, turning his eyes away with difficulty from the back of Dani's red robes.

**AT THE SAME MOMENT**, several blocks away, Yamada Genzo was riding out from his regimental headquarters with a fellow officer, named Ito. Disgusted by Hayashi's brutality on the hunting trip, Yamada had easily succeeded in persuading his father that he should move away from Pyongyang. Baron Yamada, as is typical of heads of powerful families, was unconditionally supportive of his children's ambitions as a rule. He reached into his considerable network of friends and useful connections, and by spring, Genzo had received a commission in Seoul as a major. The promotion elicited veiled hostility from nearly all Yamada's Pyongyang comrades, especially Major Hayashi, and Yamada knew it and they knew that he knew. But they all hid their true feelings so well, and expressed and accepted congratulations without any hint of bitterness, that no one had a reason to confront anyone.

In Seoul, Yamada found that no single superior held unshakable power, as in Pyongyang, but that several heads of the military balanced one another out in their vying for advancement and influence. Following his father's advice, he had aligned himself with a faction to which Major Ito also belonged. The two men were both near the same age, well-built, handsome, and from the highest society. Though not tall, Ito had a lithe waist and muscular calves that made him appear full of restrained energy. He was the heir to an earldom but wore his distinguished background lightly and was rather unpretentious. Insofar as friendship was possible in Yamada's soul, he liked Ito. They were often in each other's company outside the regiment, and were now headed to an off-site meeting on horseback.

"You see, the absorption of a weaker nation and/or peoples by a stronger nation and/or peoples is not only inevitable, but desirable," Ito said, running a finger along his shapely mustache. "Without Japan, how could Korea have modernized? Who brought the trains, roads, power lines, progress? We are benevolent, as much as it is possible to be while governing so unruly a country. And yet these bastards don't know what's good for them."

"No doubt that we brought progress here. And you are right that the law of nature applies in this instance. But I do wonder about the

whole issue of rice," Yamada countered. "Why bleed them out? It makes them hostile and uncontrollable. Can't there be another way?"

"But that rice is needed in Japan, the mother country. It is as when the body routes nutrients and fresh blood to the heart at the expense of a limb. Japan is the heart, and Korea is an extremity. Also, these Joseonjings are too well fed and energetic and full-blooded. They will be more docile once they are bled out." Ito was smiling. The rhythmic swaying of his body on the saddle put him in a particularly jaunty state of mind on this fine afternoon. "We bring them progress, in return they provide the rice, and exotic goods—the antique celadons, the tiger skins, and the like. It's the same way everywhere else in the world now. Look at Britain, France, Germany, the Netherlands, Belgium, how they divided up Africa and Asia and grow stronger. The United States in the Philippines and the South Pacific. It is the world order." He paused a moment, then noticing a crowd gathered along the boulevard, he pointed ahead and started off at a gallop. Yamada followed, picking up his pace.

"It's a parade of Joseon courtesans!" Ito exclaimed, beckoning him. Yamada brought his horse next to Ito's and saw over the heads of the crowd a line of beautifully dressed women, singing and chanting and strewing flowers. Ito was laughing so heartily that his handsome black stallion stepped in place uneasily beneath him.

"Ah, and I forgot about the women, of course. Rice, tigers, and women—that's what Joseon is good for." Ito smirked and joined in the clapping and cheering. Turning to Yamada again, he said, "I myself am quite fond of these girls. They have a different flavor than the geisha."

"What might that be?" Yamada asked.

"I find that they are more headstrong than our geisha, who are like water, soothing and yielding. These Joseon courtesans have fire—they will fight you with passion. But there is such a distinct pleasure to be had at overcoming their resistance. It's like cracking the shell of a walnut to get to the meat inside." Ito winked, making a lewd gesture with his hands.

Just then, a pair of very young apprentices walked past with linked arms, smiling winningly at the crowd, and Ito cried, "Look at those baby courtesans. Adorable, aren't they? Charming!"

**AS THEY NEARED THE END** of the parade, Jade suddenly felt overwhelmed by all the strangers so pointedly looking at her. The subtle weight of Lotus's right elbow resting on her left elbow reassured her, and she tried to suppress her anxieties. In her other arm Jade carried a basket of cosmoses and mums, cut just that morning from Dani's garden. Once in a while, Lotus reached over to the basket with her left hand and tossed the flowers at the crowd. Each time the petals rained down, people cheered and clapped.

"Now you try, it's really fun," Lotus whispered, taking the basket from Jade.

"I don't think I can throw far like you!" Jade said in a panic. Then they both giggled secretively.

"Don't be silly, they weigh nothing," Lotus coached. "Just don't think about it too much and don't throw them right at people's faces."

Jade took a handful of flowers in her hand and tossed them to her right. The petals were carried by a light blue breeze and floated for a moment before fluttering down, making pink, white, and violet patterns in the atmosphere. The crowd clapped, mesmerized. The city streets shot through with sunshine, the feeling of her shoes crunching on the packed sand—it all filled her lungs with something besides air. Here was something that Jade hadn't known was possible: a sense of being free. She nearly wanted to flap her arms like wings. Resisting the fancy, she instead laughed and carelessly tossed a flower, which soared through the air and hit a boy in the face.

**JUNGHO HAD BEEN WATCHING** the parade of courtesans with intense fascination, standing between Loach, YoungGu, and the dog. YoungGu and JungHo had become close friends as boys often do after a good fistfight. The dog was a new addition to the group: one day in September, YoungGu found it wandering underneath the

bridge, dirty and emaciated but still energetic. JungHo and Loach had both wanted to sell it to the butcher, but YoungGu looked ready to get into another fight. JungHo finally relented and let YoungGu keep the dog, as long as he fed it from his own share of food. Thereafter, YoungGu split his own meager ration with the dog and tenderly picked its fur for fleas, which he squished between his fingers. The dog was always within a few feet of YoungGu, and proved to be surprisingly useful for finding crowded places to beg. They had been roaming aimlessly when the dog led them to the parade and sat down on its haunches in front of the spectators, as if it too wanted to enjoy the sight.

Until then, JungHo had never realized that women could be so beautiful. The courtesans were almost like a different kind of people from all the women he'd known previously. The sight was so overwhelming that his stomach felt sick, but he couldn't look away. He noticed at the end of the parade a pair of girls closer to his age. They were about the same medium height and build, and dressed in identical costumes of long bud-green robes over a pink skirt. Objectively they were both little girls with ordinary faces, too young for their approaching beauty to be discerned. But his eyes were immediately fastened on one of them, as if he'd been searching precisely for her. She had a round face—especially set off by the strict center part from the hairline to the crown of her head—a pair of bright eyes, and cheeks like apples, slightly reddened from the crisp fall air. That and not much more, but that was all that was needed.

As he stared at her, she grabbed a cosmos blossom from the basket and threw it directly at his face, smiling radiantly. He met the soft flower with terror at the thought that she was taunting him on purpose—and euphoria, for the same reason. Noticing his amazement, Loach and YoungGu broke into laughter and began teasing him mercilessly, but JungHo couldn't even find it in himself to be irritated. The consciousness of something wonderful had entered his heart, though he did not yet know what it was.



# 7

## The Escape

1918

**IT IS A CONDITION OF YOUTH TO HAVE AN UNQUESTIONING BELIEF** that life is a steady progression. Jade took it for granted that one step must follow another, and that she had caught a certain forward momentum at the parade that would take her into adulthood. So she was surprised and disappointed when nothing changed in the smallness of their daily routine. Dani still didn't allow them to go beyond five houses in either direction. Jade obeyed as she always had, but dust began to settle over the loveliness of the house. She'd seen that just a little outside their neighborhood, there were shows, music, wealthy housewives imitating the fashions of courtesans, starry-eyed high school students in newsboy caps, gentlemen in high collars and monocles, stores selling all manner of delicacies. The world pulled at her, irresistible and real like the first hot day of summer. But she was cut off from everything, walled up in the middle of Seoul. As winter set in, Jade developed a habit of going out alone and sitting at the end of their street, the farthest point from the house that Dani would allow. It was on one of these afternoons that she noticed a strange boy around the neighborhood.

Later on, Jade wouldn't be able to recall exactly how he seemed when she first saw him. She realized his existence over the course of many days. He seemed to be a natural part of the surroundings like a tree or a hedge, so she became used to him before she even noticed him. He was about her age, small and skinny. His skin was nut-brown, and it was hard to tell whether that was because of the sun or from the lack of washing. The moment her eyes finally trained on him as something distinct, he smiled, as if he'd been waiting for her to do just that. He started walking toward her, a yellow dog with a curled tail following him at his heels. That was when she realized that something was off about his appearance. It was his clothes, so worn-out that they seemed to be turning themselves back into yarns. Some beggars wore more patches than the original fabric on their clothes, but his gashes were just gaping open and flapping vigorously in the piercing wind. She was torn by equal forces of pity and disgust.

"I've seen you here a lot. Do you live around here?" he asked her. She nodded reluctantly. Dani hadn't forbidden her from talking to other children, but she knew without being told. On the other hand, the force of her ennui was greater than the fear of Dani. And as dirty as the boy was, he was not so different from the village urchins she'd known growing up.

"Is that your dog?" she asked, pointing at the dog sniffing the ground behind him.

The boy whistled and the dog came bounding forward, joyfully wagging its tail.

"It's my friend's dog. You can pet him, he's gentle."

Jade squatted down and stroked the grateful dog from the head to the tail, behind the ears, and under the chin. "What's his name?" she asked.

"He doesn't have one. We just call him 'dog,'" the boy explained. "My name is JungHo, though."

Jade laughed. "Sorry. I should've asked your name first. I'm Jade." Then she added, "I should probably go home soon. I'm not allowed to go far."

"What's far?"

"Across this street."

JungHo shook his head in disbelief. "Don't you get sick of being cooped up? I've walked every street in Seoul, just to know what's out there. There's the river, the marketplace, a street where all the Yankees live . . . Not too far from here, there is a zoo. I can show you, if you want."

"Oh, I don't know." Jade paused. "What's a zoo?"

JungHo explained that that's where they kept all the animals of the world, that its most famous star was an elephant named Giant, and that they wouldn't need to pay money to see it. Jade bit her lips and considered her options. Dani had already gone out and wasn't coming back until late at night. If Jade let go of this chance, the next outing might come in a year or two, whenever the whim struck Dani's free spirit.

"Okay, but I have to be back as quickly as possible," she said, walking up to JungHo. Closer together, she saw that he was only her height or even a little shorter. But he didn't look weak. Beggars usually shuffled, whereas JungHo marched with his arms swinging high, unconcerned by the way people looked at him. He almost acted as though he dressed that way out of a sense of adventure, like a prince in disguise from old wives' tales. As they walked side by side JungHo pointed out the places of interest, as if all of Seoul belonged to him.

"That's the zoo. It used to be a palace," he said at last. There were dozens of people lined up outside its gates, even in the middle of winter. Sounds of music, shouts, and laughter wafted over the stone walls.

"Come on, this way." JungHo led her away from the entrance and rounded the corner. There were not so many passersby here; a zelkova tree was leaning its boughs over the zoo wall.

"Do you know how to climb?" JungHo asked, and she shook her head. He interlaced his hands together next to the tree and told her to step her right foot on top. Jade thought he would stumble under her weight, but he stayed in place until she found a groove in the trunk with her other foot and heaved herself up to a bough. Within

seconds, he followed and crouched next to her under the leafless branches. The dog sat and whimpered below them.

"See, there is Giant." JungHo pointed. Over the wall, there were hundreds of people thronged around a dry moat; inside the moat, there was a raised island covered by chalky, bone-colored sand. Giant was standing in the dead center of it like a beached ship with gray sails. He was so large that even from afar, Jade could see him blinking his eyes as big as the palm of her hand. The crowd cheered and threw things into the enclosure to get his attention. Whether out of patience or stubbornness, the elephant gave no reaction, and soon the bored spectators left and were replaced by the next row. Some people cursed and spat into the moat, and others tossed him apple cores, but Giant still didn't stir.

Jade thought that the creature's suffering was all the greater for its strength and size; there was nothing tragic about a captive flea. She didn't want to keep looking, and at the same time couldn't turn around and leave it. She had been longing to see the world. Now that she saw what it was, she felt a creeping sense of nausea.

JungHo tugged at her sleeve. Someone was shouting in their direction.

About thirty yards away, a uniformed guard was waving his rifle at them and swearing. Jade struggled to hold her scream; JungHo had already scrambled down to the ground. The dog was barking and growling at the guard, baring all its white teeth.

"Jump!" JungHo shouted. The guard was making his way toward them, brandishing the butt of his rifle like a club. JungHo yelled, "I'll catch you!" and Jade shook her head.

Almost at the foot of the tree, the guard cursed and aimed his rifle at the dog. JungHo stayed still, unwilling to run away without her. Jade took a breath and jumped off, landing on her knees and palms in front of JungHo. The three of them fled without turning back to see whether the guard was following them—not stopping or slowing down until they'd reached her house.

"Are you okay? Let me see your hands," JungHo said, breathing hard.

"I'm okay, it's just a scrape," she protested as he took her hands in his and blew away the dirt. The dog thumped his tail, whimpered loudly, and flattened himself on the ground in exhaustion.

"That elephant," Jade began. "Do you know what it's thinking all day, standing so still and quiet?"

JungHo reflected for a moment. "It's probably just annoyed at having so many people around. Or it's thinking about food," he offered.

"No, it's thinking, How can I get out of here? You saw how it wasn't chained. It was very tall, but obviously it can't cross over that moat. So elephants can't jump. But don't you think there's a way it could get out?"

JungHo's face turned dark and serious as he mulled it over. "I don't know, I'm so sorry."

"Let's come up with ideas, next time we meet," Jade said.

When she came back inside the house, she announced to Lotus, "My new friend took me to the zoo and we saw the biggest animal in the world! What's strange is that I thought it would make me happy, but it made me sad."

"A new friend?" Lotus asked, closing her sewing kit. She'd just finished reattaching the *goreum* ribbon of her jacket.

"Yes, a boy our age with a yellow dog."

"Oh, I've seen him around the neighborhood," Lotus said, suddenly reopening the sewing kit. She began pointedly adding more stitches to the ribbon, which was already secured. "He's a dirty, pickpocketing street urchin. You should stay far away if you don't want to catch lice."

Jade was wounded. They had never disagreed about anything before, and Jade tried to shake off the feeling that there was a change in their friendship as thin and inevitable as a hairline break in a frozen lake. She tried to reassure Lotus that no one would take her place, that they would always be the oldest and closest friends in the world. But still, no matter how many times Jade tried to get her to come out and meet JungHo, she refused. Instead, Lotus stayed in the house next to Luna, who was heading to late pregnancy in catatonic silence.

From then on, whenever Jade came out of the house to play, JungHo was waiting for her by the gates. Sometimes he brought the dog and they cuddled him or made him fetch sticks. Other times he came alone and they strategized the elephant's escape while walking around the block. By the time JungHo let her know he'd lost his entire family and slept outside in a tent, Jade didn't think there was anything wrong about her new friend.

"You know, we're not so different. I don't have parents either, although mine are still alive," Jade told him. "My mother told me I must never come back looking for them. They would be ruined if the other villagers found out I'd become a courtesan apprentice."

"Do you miss them?" JungHo asked. Jade tried to recall her mother combing and braiding her hair at night, and how she embraced Jade one last time while making her swear not to come back. Those memories were already becoming fainter, like stars at the approaching of dawn.

"I used to miss them, but now I feel like I've met my real family," Jade said.

One especially cold day, Jade snuck out one of the countless silk comforters from the paulownia-tree chest and gave it to JungHo. He seemed more shocked than pleased.

"Don't worry, take it," Jade said, pushing it into his arms. "We have dozens more inside."

JungHo wordlessly looked down at the comforter filled with silk cocoons as light as air. Something seemed to stir in his mind, and he turned resolute.

"When I'm older I'll give you something a hundred times finer than this," he told her. Jade smiled and said of course, without expecting him to ever make good on his promise. This was why JungHo made such an impression on her, the way he said with total confidence that he would give her something worth more than he would probably earn in his life. JungHo had nothing compared to Jade, yet he seemed incapable of cowering. He never blamed his circumstances or thought regretfully about the past. He was like an empty vessel, but in the best way: it was true he didn't hold a lot of knowledge, but his mind was free to flow in whatever direction, and

he didn't nurture pain. Whatever he did keep permanently, Jade was certain that he would protect firmly in the bottom of his *jangdok* pot. He might never fling himself far from where he'd landed, Jade thought, but he would nonetheless be happy for the simple reason that he refused to be caged.

## 8

# I Have Met the Right Person, at Last

1919

**THE SECRET TO DANI'S SUCCESS WAS THAT SHE LIKED NOT JUST TO BE** busy, but to have *projects* to which she could apply her considerable mental and physical abilities. Her fame, her two-story house with its exquisite furnishings and rarefied garden, her powerful protector, even her unusual beauty and allure—none of these had resulted from chance, but from her imagination, planning, and execution.

Her most recent project was rearing her three young charges. They had come into her life unbidden, as a favor to her dearest cousin. But she had accepted them partly because she was at an age when wealthy, childless courtesans started to think of adopting foster daughters to care for them in retirement. She thought it would be amusing to teach everything she knew to worthy successors, the same way men of higher status tried to leave their legacies through bequests, writings, and descendants in general. Why not her?

But this project was turning out to be more complicated than she'd imagined. While the children, even Jade, were growing on her, she still didn't feel like a mother. This lack of instinct probably originated from an emptiness in her womb, she thought. Dani had never become pregnant, and now she wondered if she just wasn't



meant for the job. All through her twenties, she had been terrified of falling prey to this malady, stuffing herself with silk cocoons beforehand and afterward taking the tea that would bring on her cycle earlier and more heavily than usual. But she couldn't always know when an encounter would take place; and sometimes when, in the middle of the act, she would whisper to her client that she wasn't properly protected, he would nonetheless go inside her. On such occasions, she lay very still, horrified by the stickiness between her legs, while the man rolled off, sighing contentedly and closing his eyes, as though he'd just accomplished a great deal. Though a grand courtesan, admired in vast circles of cultured and important men, all she could do in those situations was wait until he felt well enough to leave, wash off as thoroughly as possible with scalding hot water, and never see him again.

These events had happened often enough over the years that now, at an age when most married women had at least three or four children, Dani suspected that she was never able to conceive in the first place. On one hand, it mystified her to see Luna fall pregnant after just one unfortunate incident and endure such prolonged agony; on the other hand, she felt relieved that she'd never had to suffer that way.

Despite this lack of an inner compass for parenting, Dani was finally beginning to feel that she was prodding the girls in the right direction. Every day they were acting less like empty-headed little children; she'd once even caught Lotus with a book. But just as Dani was observing how all three girls were improving in looks, mind, and attitude, her commitment to the mothering project was shaken by a highly distracting incident. It was a letter addressed in a familiar hand, delivered at breakfast a few days after the parade.

Leaving her porridge barely touched, she went to her room to read its contents in peace. In it, SungSoo talked of how he'd obtained her address by inquiring at MyungWol, and that he'd been absorbed by the demands of his businesses and his family since returning from abroad. In such a life there was no room for romance, and indeed he had long given up hope of love beyond comfort; he had had no feelings in that regard for many years. (He

did not say “since you,” but that was the intended effect.) But seeing her again at the parade woke in him the blissful yearning he had always felt for her. “You looked as beautiful as when I first met you,” he wrote. He had left her alone and gone to Japan, thinking they were both young and would eventually heal. (He didn’t mention the part about his marrying his wife.) Only now that he was older, he saw how wrong it was to have gone away without her. He wished to offer her his penitence—in person.

Dani read and reread this letter, tossed it on her little desk, asked Hesoon to bring her some coffee, and clutched it back again with a cup in her other hand. The warm drink had the familiar effect of calming her emotions and at the same time, sharpening her mind, bringing back images that had been long buried. As painful as the memories were, the act of recollection was bittersweet and delicious. She saw herself watching clear-eyed over her life as from the ether, even as her body was huddled over her writing table. The letter proved that the love she once had for him wasn’t just an illusion, a false memory. She had truly lived.

“All the same, I don’t have any feelings left for him, only for his memories,” she thought. Unconsciously, she unfolded her vanity mirror. When she saw her reflection, she admitted to herself that she was curious how she’d looked to him that day; she was hoping she didn’t appear too old or changed. Satisfied with her appearance, she closed the mirror with a triumphant smile.

“No, I won’t see him,” she thought. “Or even write back to him. He doesn’t even deserve a response. Ignoring him is the only dignified choice I have.”

Though Dani believed she had made the right decision by not responding, in the days that followed, she suffered from an unexplained and relentless headache. She struggled to hide her irritability at parties and snapped at the children over the littlest things, even at Luna. At night, lying on her silk bedspread, she felt more alone than she’d been in years. “I will never fall in love again,” she moaned, wiping her cheeks with the back of her hand. She was thirty-three, no one new was going to court her, and she had blown off the one man she’d passionately loved. When these thoughts kept

her awake, Dani downed some glasses of soju alone and in her nightclothes—a practice she normally despised as untidy, but deemed medicinal under the present circumstances.

Just after the first snowfall, another letter came for Dani which, in spite of her pounding heart at seeing the envelope in the maid's hand, was not from SungSoo. It was from an activist who had recently returned from working in Shanghai, and though she did not know him, she had heard of his reputation. In addition, he'd been recommended to write to her by General \_\_\_\_\_, based in Vladivostok, who was being supported by her cousin Silver in Pyongyang. He did not write either the general's name or her cousin's in fear of interception, but Dani immediately agreed to see him at an unassuming little teahouse where no one of any importance would ever go.

When she arrived at their meeting place, there was only one guest seated by himself at a corner table away from the door, deep in his own thoughts. He met her eyes immediately when she entered, and rose courteously as she walked toward him.

"I'm Lee MyungBo. It is so good of you to come," he said with a bow.

"You shouldn't say that, it is my honor." Dani returned the bow and settled on the chair across from him. They ordered tea and warmed into some small talk about the weather.

"It is so much colder here, of course. In Shanghai, it only ever gets as cool as autumn in our country, and it seldom snows," MyungBo said with a smile. Though not as handsome as SungSoo, MyungBo had a woodsy attractiveness in his umber eyes and baritone voice.

"Oh, how I should like to see Shanghai," Dani replied naturally, without thinking. She liked how he had said "our country," that he'd been everywhere in the wide-open world where she also longed to go, and that he was warm, simple, and unaffected in all his mannerisms. He was so modest that he nearly blushed as he struggled to bring up the true purpose of their meeting. She broached the subject first.

"With regards to that matter, which you could not specify in your letter for reasons of discretion, I am ready to lend you my support in whatever way I can." She gazed significantly at his warm, weary face.

"Thank you for such a clear pledge. It is so taxing to ask of a stranger, and a woman no less . . ." he muttered, looking down at the table as to avoid her dark and dazzling stare. Then he explained, in fits and starts, that there were several simultaneous "initiatives" being planned all at once, both in the peninsula and abroad. The leaders of separate activist groups and militias across Manchuria, Primorski, and even the United States and Hawaii were attempting to create a unified center in the form of a provisional government in Shanghai. Meanwhile, in Korea itself, there was an effort to bring together the various factions led by the Cheondoists, the Christians, the Buddhists, the Nationalists, and the Communists, in an unequivocal declaration of independence at a single moment.

"All of these efforts take a considerable amount of resources, to feed and arm our soldiers and activists, to have offices and safe houses, print the pamphlets and manifestos, transport the people across the border, bribe officials and get people out of jail, and for a hundred other reasons. I am constantly straining to discover new sources of funds," MyungBo said apologetically. His cheeks crimsoned like a child's, which was unexpected and touching in someone so grave and dignified.

"My friends have all but abandoned me, and even my younger brother refuses to see me. Among my family, only my wife and my son have stayed by my side." He smiled a bittersweet smile, and Dani felt herself smart just a little, as if she'd been jabbed with something sharp.

"Speak no more. I understand. But do you see, you've met just the right person." She smiled reassuringly. "The rich are ever so much more willing to spend their money on courtesans than on the cause. Luckily, the courtesans have more heart than they do. I can round up the five courtesan guilds in Seoul. I am the leader of one and know the heads of each of the others. No one is better suited to convince them than I am."

"Truly, I am overwhelmed." MyungBo looked up at her with a joyful expression, and she also felt her spirits soaring. "Yes, I have met the right person, at last."

On the way home, Dani reflected on these words and MyungBo's expression as he uttered them. She wondered anxiously whether they had a hidden meaning or were innocently spoken. In the deepest part of her heart, she sensed that there was some significance there besides the relief at finding a willing supporter. This thought came to her as a strange new delight after the onslaught of depression caused by SungSoo's letter. It occurred to her that SungSoo's moral laxity was what made him both available and less appealing; conversely, MyungBo's integrity kept him aloof and more worthy of admiration. As she reflected she took in the snow-covered streets, blue-gray in the shade and brilliant gold in the afternoon sun, and thought it was all more beautiful and alive than usual. She felt younger than she had in a long time—perhaps even years.

\* \* \*

**ONE AFTERNOON,** there was a quiet knock on their gates and Jade went out, expecting to see JungHo's familiar face. Instead, she was greeted by a handsome gentleman who asked her politely whether her aunt was home. Jade went back inside to announce the visitor, and Dani put on her coat and went outside.

"You didn't reply to my letter," SungSoo said to her, without any superfluous greetings. He was wearing a fashionable hat with a medium brim and a new coat of the finest English wool. A fresh scent of cologne and good health emanated from his robust, well-fed body, but his face wore a sorrowful expression.

"I hope you know how sorry I am. I should never have left you here and gone to Japan . . ." he continued, feet firmly planted on the ground, as if demonstrating his steadfastness. Above his head, bits of snow were starting to float around like dandelion fluff. They were so weightless that their descent seemed to take forever.

"You do look very sorry judging by your expression," she replied. "But you know what gives you away? Your voice. It doesn't sound sorry at all."

She turned around and was about to walk away when he grabbed hold of her hand. He pulled her firmly, spinning her round to him and placing his other hand behind the small of her back. Then he kissed her.

At the moment right before he kissed her, when she realized what was going to happen, she thought that she would pull away, disgusted. But when his lips met hers, she wanted to keep kissing him. The fact that he craved her made her deliriously happy. When they let go of each other she sighed. "No, I don't hate you."

SungSoo looked with a sincere expression into her eyes, waiting for her to absolve him. He was aware that at that moment Dani thought him as handsome and attractive as when they first met. He was intoxicated by that distinct and palmy pleasure, the consciousness of one's own seductive power, which in so many people's lives is the closest thing to love that they experience. He reached for her hand, and she did not pull away.

"But it's too late for forgiveness. So leave me in peace." Her voice shook when she said those last words, and they both sensed how she didn't really mean them, and in fact meant just the opposite.

He didn't know what to do. He could just as well have left her then and there and not pursued her further, not because of her wishes or because he was a proud man, but because he was fundamentally unable to truly lose himself for another person. Not only was it distasteful to him intellectually, his soul was also incapable of it. But at that moment, he noticed how Dani was shivering and was moved by the sight of her fragility. He leaned in and enveloped her in his arms. As soon as he did so, a tear loosened from Dani's eyes and she melted into his embrace.

When they came apart, she wordlessly led him through the gates. They both suppressed the urge to run to her room, walking calmly as if they weren't burning with the need to tear off the layers of wool and wrap their legs around each other's waists. Once inside,

they made love not knowing or caring about anything else except how their bodies felt together.

It was close to midnight when they were finished and lying side by side in the candlelight. Dani thought to herself, This is the happiest time of my entire life. There could be nothing that would follow that would be better than this evening spent with him alone, away from the rest of the world. Though it would feel much longer in her memory, it was no more than a few hours in reality. Like all such moments, it ended before she was ready—with a knock on her door.

"There is a gentleman at the front gates, asking for you," Hesoon whispered in her ear. "I tried to tell him that you were not home, but then he said he would wait for you, and then I didn't know what to do."

"Well, who is it?" Dani bristled, stepping out into the hallway. "It's not the police? Or someone that the judge may have sent?"

"I don't think so. He said he goes by Lee—and didn't tell me his given name, but said you'll know who he is."

"Oh!" Dani drew a sharp breath. "I do know who that is. I wonder why he's here? At any rate, I can't have him waiting outside in this cold for hours, thinking I'll be on my way home. I'll have to receive him. Show him into the sitting room."

Dani went back inside her room and began putting on her clothes. She asked SungSoo to stay quiet in the room while she dealt with a visitor in the sitting room. At this, SungSoo let his irritation show: he wasn't going to hide from this mysterious stranger, who Dani insisted was not her lover and yet was visiting her in the dead of the night. No, he would rather leave than hide in the room like a thief.

"Fine then, do as you wish," Dani said, exasperated beyond her control, a deep flush rising to her cheeks. She stormed out of the room and hurried into the sitting room, where Lee MyungBo was standing uncertainly in his coat, holding his hat in two hands.

"Miss Dani, I apologize for barging in on you like this . . ." He started to explain, and Dani noticed with hidden pleasure the subtle

brightness of his eyes and a hint of color on his face. "I know how inappropriate it is, but I've come to tell you . . ."

"Yes?" Dani approached him with a light step, excited and also ashamed to feel so drawn. MyungBo took a step toward her too, almost involuntarily. As he appeared to reach his hand toward her upper arm, she heard the door of her room creak open, and SungSoo walked through the hallway and into the sitting room.

What happened next was as deep a confusion as any three people had ever experienced. SungSoo and MyungBo started saying at the same time, "What are you doing here?" while Dani looked rapidly between both men and exclaimed, "How do you two know each other?" An embarrassed silence followed for a minute. SungSoo, the quickest to recover, said to Dani:

"MyungBo and I are old friends from our student days in Tokyo."

"I see," Dani said, and then the room was plunged into silence once more.

"I came to tell you something important," MyungBo said, but this time his eyes no longer had the brilliance she'd seen before. "His Majesty, Emperor Gojong, has passed away."

Drawing a sharp breath, Dani clutched a hand to her chest. Both men sprang forward instinctively as to steady her, but MyungBo checked himself while SungSoo laid a protective hand on Dani's waist. MyungBo continued.

"It happened just a few hours ago. One of our informers, a lady of the bedchamber, sent a message as soon as it happened. He was having a bowl of sweet rice water when suddenly, he started choking and crying out, coughing up blood. The lady said his dead body was covered in hives."

A horrified moan escaped Dani's lips, and she sank onto the floor. SungSoo sat down next to her, keeping a hand on her back, while MyungBo remained standing in his place.

"But why poison him? He's already been deposed many years, and his son is a mere puppet," SungSoo said.

"Who knows? But I think, most likely, to let us know that they can kill our sovereign without consequences, just as they assassinated his wife, the empress . . ." MyungBo paused, glancing



at Dani, who looked alarmingly pale. "Miss Dani is ill. The news is so shocking . . ."

"I'm all right. I'll feel better if I have a little drink," she replied, and ordered Hesoon to bring her a bottle of soju and three glasses. The maid soon returned with the drink, a bowl of refreshing white kimchi and other snacks, and set the tray down in front of Dani. At her urging, MyungBo sat down as well. Dani first poured for the two men, and then SungSoo poured for her, and they raised their glasses at the same time, murmuring, "To His Majesty."

Once the soju had circulated through their bodies, each began to feel more comfortable—not about the emperor's death, but the situation among themselves. It is always excruciating to discover that one's distinct connections, who ought to belong firmly and chastely in separate spheres of one's life, are somehow acquainted, and perhaps more intimately than one would like. Each of them keenly suffered from this, though SungSoo in particular took this as an insult and a betrayal. His good breeding and the soothing effects of soju were the only things that kept him from succumbing to the jealousy that burned deeply in his chest.

"So what happens now?" Dani asked MyungBo, revived a bit from the soju.

"You know that we've been preparing for the demonstration . . ." he began carefully, wondering whether he could be more forthcoming in SungSoo's presence. Then, making up his mind to be direct, he said, "It probably means we will gather our forces earlier than we'd planned. In about a month, around His Majesty's funeral, when the crowds gather in Seoul to pay their respects."

"But are you ready? Can everything come together before then?" Dani questioned while pouring another round for the two men. This time, MyungBo took the bottle from Dani and poured her drink for her. The gesture was customary, as one must never pour one's own drink, but nonetheless it roiled SungSoo with its intimacy.

"That's also why I came to see you. I immediately realized that things will start to move very quickly, and I didn't know whom I may possibly trust, except you."

After he finished, MyungBo downed his soju without meeting the eyes of either of his companions.

"Please, tell me how I can be of any help," Dani pleaded. "What is needed?"

MyungBo's face crimsoned at once. Already wounded by the death of the emperor, he was shocked once more at finding SungSoo at Dani's house, and somehow strangely hurt as well. Now he was humiliated by having to ask again for favors in plain view of the man who had already refused him so coldly. He focused on the candlelight dancing inside his cup of soju in order to avoid looking at either of the lovers in the eyes.

"We plan on making the demonstration peaceful. For that we would need to prepare only the manifestos, and as many Korean flags as we can manage. But without a doubt, we will need to be ready for whatever comes after the demonstration. That means guns, safe houses, transportation for countless activists and messengers . . . And then again, that's not even including the preparation for the outbreak of direct military combat. Not just in Manchuria, where most of our remaining troops are, but in Korea itself. If we succeed in gathering enough force, there will be a definite war within our borders, for the first time in more than twenty years."

"I understand." Dani nodded. "I haven't been idle since our meeting. I've personally met with each of the guild leaders. You'll be heartened to know that they've all pledged a third of their earnings this month, to begin with." She smiled, her cheeks flushing beautifully. The presence of the two men had put her in a feverish—yet not wholly unpleasant—state of mind. For one, MyungBo's visible discomfort confirmed to her that he was jealous of SungSoo. Even with grave issues at stake, she couldn't help but feel rather delighted.

"When the five courtesan guilds of Seoul pool their money together, you'll see that it's not an insignificant sum, even when we're talking about war. You see, people look down on us for how we make our living, but we have our honor. Actually, I've never been so glad as I am now to be able to help in my own small way . . ."

Dani's voice trailed away and her eyes welled up. She was quite overcome with emotion, although it was unclear even to her whether that gladness was purely from contributing to the movement, or from other, less selfless causes.

She sipped on her soju, and explained when and how she may be able to transfer the money to him in the coming weeks. As MyungBo thanked her in the most effusive but dignified manner, Dani turned to SungSoo and innocently asked, "Well, isn't there something you could do as well?"

SungSoo, blindsided by this question, blurted out, "Me?"

"You must surely be able to contribute something, you of all people," Dani persisted.

"That's all my family's money, don't you see . . . I myself don't make very much," SungSoo protested rapidly. "As it is, I'm spending endlessly on my publishing house and the bicycle shop, neither of which have ever been profitable." Dani's face lit up unexpectedly.

"Oh! But you *can* help! How could we have missed it!" She clasped her hands around SungSoo's arm. "Didn't you hear what Mr. MyungBo just said? We will need thousands of copies of manifestos and flags. You have your own printing press, don't you?"

"I do, but . . ." SungSoo muttered with a sinking heart. He couldn't protest that it was too dangerous, or try to get out of it in any other way. He addressed MyungBo directly, saying, "But is that what you need, my fellow?"

"If you're offering, I will take it very gladly," MyungBo replied, courteously and sincerely as ever. "But only if it's not a burden to you. And speak freely if it is, and I will never bring up any of this in front of you, ever again."

Seeing Dani's eyes intensely fixed on his face, SungSoo had no choice but to say, "Of course it's not a burden." And as these words left his lips, he already felt a little less in love with her.

# 9

## The March

1919

**IT WAS THE SECOND TIME MYUNGBO FOUND HIMSELF AT SUNGSOO'S** publishing house, where he'd thought he would never return. When he arrived, he was told by the secretary—the same brown-faced young man from the country—to wait outside SungSoo's office; he wasn't asked if he'd like coffee.

MyungBo was not offended, however. Years of similar experiences had left him well conscious of the coldness that enters into amicable relationships when money becomes involved. He himself had never cared that much for possessions; even as a child, he was sometimes scolded for giving away his clothes and books to poorer classmates and servants' children. It had appeared to him then that no matter how much he gave, he would always have more than enough. As he grew older, he even relished the struggles brought on by his sacrifices. There was a soaring awareness that illuminated his soul whenever he did the right thing, which also cost him something.

This euphoria, however, was balanced by the utter terror he felt when he looked around and saw so many others to whom this consciousness was not only absent, but unknowable and abhorrent.

Most people, MyungBo realized, were made of a different material than his; and it was not something that could shift, as from coldness to warmth, but an elemental and fundamental difference, like wood from metal. At a time like this, an apocalyptic time if it ever was—his people dying under the Japanese bayonet, everywhere in the world bloodshed and rape, and the war in Europe, which had only just ended—people still thought about going to university, obtaining a lucrative post, or squeezing more profits out of their land, and churning ever greater wealth, as if the world itself weren't burning all around them. It was one thing for the starving peasants to not care about independence, and many of them did not mind whether their landlord was Japanese or Korean, as long as they got to keep some grain to feed their families. But the indifference and hostility from the educated class, who should know better and willingly take up their duty, cut MyungBo to the deepest core. Even his wife would have preferred that he had stayed in Korea to take a position or while away his years waiting to inherit his father's land. She never said this, but MyungBo knew her feelings. Regarding their marriage, he was profoundly disappointed at not being understood exactly where he felt most proud of himself.

This was surely the reason he had felt so taken in by Dani, who had shown such acute perception and genuine empathy for the cause. Turning his hat mindlessly in his hands, MyungBo recalled Dani's brilliant eyes and her eloquent, expressive lips. It was such a shame that people only ever saw sensuality in that lovely face, which was so clearly full of intelligence and purity. And more than that—there was something very touching about her, strong and proud yet simultaneously very tender and open. But at that moment, MyungBo abruptly stopped his musing and rose from his chair. The secretary had announced that SungSoo was ready for him.

"Have you been waiting a long time?" SungSoo asked him as he entered the office.

"No, not very long," MyungBo said, smiling weakly. "And I would have waited even longer. I am indebted to you for the rest of my life."

Instead of protesting, SungSoo remained quiet and lit up a cigarette with downcast eyes. Leaning back and sinking into his deep-seated chair, he breathed out the smoke while crossing one long leg over the other.

"I won't say it hasn't been . . . troublesome," he replied at last.

"I understand that. I truly do, my friend." MyungBo blushed. "But you, with your intelligence and education, you must surely understand that with this contribution, you've gained your place in history. Don't you?"

"Ah, history! Ha!" SungSoo laughed a hollow laugh, scattering wisps of smoke. "Fine, MyungBo, let's discuss history then. You remember as I do the story of Koguryo? That martial kingdom of our ancestors ruled not just the entire northern part of the Korean peninsula, but far into Primorski and Manchuria, for seven hundred years beginning in the first century. Then after its demise, Balhae ruled another three hundred years in those same territories. Now though, those lands belong to Russia and China, and who do you see there? The Russians and the Chinese. Then what happened to the Koreans who used to live there for a thousand years? They've been wiped out, or they've moved to the south, or intermarried with the Russians and the Chinese. But the few ethnic Koreans, the descendants of Koguryo who remain, do they mourn the loss of their mother country? No, they have no longing or patriotism for the Korean peninsula. Their identity has been completely diluted in the past thousand years.

"The concept of a nation is a pure construct. It serves to hold up our reality, we need it for government et cetera, but it is neither self-evident nor natural, and becomes more meaningless when you think of it in historical context. For all of human history, nations have been destroyed, absorbed into others, reborn, or forgotten, and that makes no difference to the well-being of the posterity. Whether it's Koguryo, the Roman Empire, or ancient Persia, it's all the same. We were annexed by Japan nine years ago, now that's a fact. If nothing changes, then in a thousand years, there won't be a 'Korea' or the 'Korean people.' But people then will not care one bit that their country was once, a thousand years ago, independent."

The logic of his argument was clear to both of them. A self-satisfied smile appeared on SungSoo's handsome face as his friend struggled to collect his thoughts.

"What you're saying appears very rational," MyungBo said at last. "You may be right that all of this—all the struggle, death, and sacrifice—won't matter at all in the grand scheme of history. But what you're saying is like this: suppose there is a little boy who is playing on the train tracks. Suddenly you see the train approaching, and the boy is too young or too scared to know how to save himself. Then you say to yourself, 'Well, in the grand scheme of things, he will eventually die, whether it's now or sixty years down the road. So why should I bother saving him? Better to just go about my business.' That might be rational, but that doesn't make it *right*."

SungSoo was about to respond, "Who is to say what is right then? Is it always you?" But changing his mind, he quietly extinguished his cigarette while MyungBo sat up straighter and cleared his throat.

"Well, that's enough talking, I think. You wanted to check on the progress?" SungSoo rose from the chair, pulling down at the hem of his smart wool suit. "Come now, let's go downstairs."

The two men walked through a narrow hallway, and took the stairs to the basement level. At the landing, there was a locked door under a bare lightbulb; SungSoo opened it with a key and went inside first.

At a glance, it looked as though the cavernous space was completely unlit. As his eyes adjusted, however, MyungBo noticed a pair of tiny windows near the top of one wall, which peeked out onto the street at ankle level of the pedestrians. In the middle of the room, there were two men bent over some tables, busy at work, while nearby another man was operating the printing press. MyungBo walked over to the machine and picked up the top copy from a stack of broadsheet papers; the title THE GREAT REPUBLIC OF KOREA DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE was emblazoned boldly at the top like fresh footprints in snow.

"How many copies?" MyungBo asked.

"Two thousand thus far, ten thousand before March first," SungSoo replied.

"Ah, SungSoo," his friend exclaimed warmly. "You have done your part for your country. And the flags?"

SungSoo pointed at the two men at the tables, who were painting red, blue, and black ink onto wood blocks and stamping them onto sheets of muslin.

"I don't care what you say, it's your actions that count. SungSoo, you are a patriot indeed," MyungBo said quietly. SungSoo sighed, shaking his head.

"Listen, MyungBo, if you want my advice . . . If you want Korea to truly survive this storm, and not be obliterated without any trace in history, heed my words," he said, more sincerely than before. "I have no faith that this will work. What will a protest accomplish? What is a 'Declaration of Independence' without any true power? All this will cause is more clamping down from the Japanese, thousands of arrests and worse."

"We are expecting that, SungSoo," MyungBo said resolutely. "All the representatives have sworn to sign the Declaration together and then get arrested with no resistance. The religious leaders—Cheondoists, Christians, Buddhists—put their weight behind nonviolence, that we must first try to do this without force. None of us have any expectation of getting out of this alive, but we're going through with it anyway."

"No, hear me out. If you want Korea to actually overthrow Japanese rule, it's not going to come from rounding up the powerless people and marching, carrying nothing but flags. What you need is outside help—the United States, most likely. You know about President Wilson's Fourteen Points speech to reestablish the sovereignty of every colonized people in the world. He made that promise in front of all the nations, and will not ignore us, especially if we make an appeal to American interests in Asia. It doesn't benefit the U.S. to have a Japan that's too strong and too greedy in the Pacific, so he will listen," SungSoo said, revealing more of his inner thoughts than he'd ever had in all these years. For that at least, MyungBo felt grateful.



"I've heard this before, of course. Some people even believe that we are so behind the rest of the world that we need to ask America to govern us rather than fight for sovereignty." MyungBo smiled bitterly, lowering his eyes.

"Well, at least that way we won't be destroyed. What matters more, a titular independence, or actual prosperity? If you end up killing half the country in order to make it 'independent,' doesn't that defeat the purpose of fighting? You act like you don't care about death, but the whole point of this struggle is to live, isn't it?" SungSoo said, and MyungBo saw the truth, *his* truth, in his eyes. SungSoo was a man best suited to living—no one could do it better than he. MyungBo was only good at making life harder for himself, but he could see no other alternative. He sighed.

"You're right, I don't care about dying. But I don't think our resistance is all in vain, as you do. I accept your help with ineffable gratitude—truly. For me, however—and for many others like me . . . The purpose of our movement isn't simply to avoid extinction. Its purpose is to do what's right. And you see how we've come back to that point where neither of us can convince the other? It is truly outside the realm of logic to determine what is right or wrong. Without any expectations of making you see things the way I do, I can only tell you what my soul insists on." With that, MyungBo put on his hat again, signaling he was ready to leave.

\* \* \*

**ON THE MORNING OF THE FIRST DAY** of March, JungHo woke up with a strange, unintelligible whisper in his ear.

His followers all believed that JungHo had an uncanny ability to sense things before they happened. He had explained that his father had been a tiger hunter in PyongAhn province, and so he'd inherited the same instinct that animals—and their hunters—have for survival. Secretly, he didn't know if that was true; but living on the streets, he had become attuned to reading people's faces, hearing their words, and interpreting their silence. Sometimes he really did feel he could simply smell a change in the air and run from danger, whether that

was the police or another gang of older boys and grown-ups. In this way, he'd led his group out of trouble several times, and had earned their unshakable trust.

JungHo sat up from the pile of dirty straw mats that made up both the floor and the bed. To his left, Loach was asleep on his side; YoungGu was at the other end, and the dog was snuggling between the two boys at the most comfortable spot in the tent.

"Loach, wake up," JungHo whispered, shaking his friend's shoulder.

"Hm? Cut it out, I'm still sleepy."

"Wake up," JungHo repeated. "I think something's going to happen today."

"What are you talking about?" Loach asked, rubbing his eyes with his knuckles. "What's going to happen?"

"I don't know. Something pretty bad," JungHo said. It was only as these words left his lips that he realized what he was sensing. "We have to be careful today. I don't think we should divide up as we normally do. Let's stick together."

Noticing JungHo's seriousness, Loach rounded his eyes and nodded. "Whatever you say, Chief."

When the pale pink sun rose like an eye over the quiet city, all fifteen boys and one dog left the camp together. Some of the boys wanted to do their usual routines and shows, but JungHo would not let them. Nothing was out of the ordinary beyond the swell of visitors from the countryside, waiting to attend the emperor's funeral, four days hence. The streets teemed with merchants, vendors, laborers, and students, and their shouts and footsteps made humming sounds on the roads packed brightly with snow. A tantalizing fragrance of roasted chestnuts wafted through the crisp, cold air. All the boys and the dog felt their mouths water and tried to forget their hunger as they wandered through the streets.

When the sun was past its highest point, they stumbled into a wide plaza, which was filled with hundreds of people, many of them students wearing uniforms.

"Hey, JungHo, look at this crowd! I bet we could make a lot of money if we did our act here," Loach shouted gleefully. But JungHo

shook his head; his eyes were gazing far out to the pagoda at the edge of the plaza, where a student was standing, facing the crowd. He was wearing a black newsboy cap and a long winter coat, and looked to be eighteen at most. He raised a fist, and as one the crowd fell silent.

"Today, we declare that Korea is an independent nation and that Koreans are a free people," the student began, reading from a broadsheet in his hands. His voice should have been lost in the distance; instead, the cold air seemed to magnify it through the plaza, which was filled with an eerie silence.

"We seek to announce this to the whole world in order to illuminate the inviolable truth of human equality, and for our posterity to enjoy the rights of sovereignty and survival in perpetuity. This is in keeping with the conscience of the world, the ordinance of the heavens, and the ethos of our modern era; thus, no power in the world will be able to stop us.

"It has been ten years since we've been sacrificed to Imperialism, that dark legacy of the past, suffering immeasurable pain under the oppression of another people for the first time in our five-thousand-year history. All of our twenty million people hold freedom as our most sacred desire. The conscience of all humanity is on our side. Today, our army is Justice, and our spear and shield are Humanitarianism, and with these we shall never fail!" He threw his fist up as though punching the sky, and the crowd roared.

"Today we seek only to build ourselves, not to destroy another. We do not want vengeance. We only seek to right the wrongs of the Japanese Imperialists who oppress and plunder us, so we can live in a fair and humane way . . . A new world is coming. The era of Force is past, and the era of Righteousness is here. After a century of preparation, Humanitarianism has begun to shine its bright light all over the world, and a new spring is giving life to every being on earth. We have nothing to fear . . ."

JungHo didn't understand much of what was said, but he saw around him the rapturous faces, many wet with tears, and was surprised by the hotness welling up in his own eyes. JungHo had never had a day of schooling. What he now understood was that the

world was a desperately dark place, not just for his family and for the beggar boys, but for everyone standing there. Their shared pain reverberated through his body like a common heartbeat.

Finished with the speech, the student held up a flag, white with a red and blue symbol in the center. "Korean Independence *manseh!*" he shouted, and after the first time the crowd also joined in.

"*Manseh! Manseh!*" It felt as though their voices could be heard all across Seoul, carried by that same cold wind. The crowd had more than tripled in the plaza by this point, and somehow they were each holding a flag over their heads. The thousands of white flags waving and shimmering in the wind resembled a flock of cranes about to take flight.

Soon the crowd began to move, marchers standing shoulder to shoulder as they walked westward across the city. JungHo and his gang joined in, making their way down the entire length of Legation Street, from the American Consulate at number 10 to the French Legation at number 28. A slender female student walked up to the ornately carved front gates of the Legation and knocked as people shouted, "France! France! Friend of liberty! Liberty, equality, fraternity! Help us!" But it remained shut, and no sound or movement could be perceived from the curtained windows of the limestone mansion.

A whole minute had passed with enthusiastic chants of *manseh* before JungHo realized that the French would not open their doors. The strange whisper returned to his ear—a sound as soft as snow falling on snow. He turned to his right and left, and saw Loach, YoungGu, and all his blood brothers shouting with the crowd—and felt the stretching and slowing of time.

"Guys! We must leave. Now!" he yelled. The boys looked at him, mouths open.

He grabbed Loach and YoungGu by the arm and ran as fast as he could. The dog was barking madly, as though it had seen a ghost.

As JungHo slid into an alley, the chanting died down and turned into shouts on one end of the avenue. A Japanese squadron had arrived, led by cavalry officers. Within seconds, the marchers began running from that end, pushing the others farther into the avenue.

Loud cracking noises erupted just ahead of piercing screams; the troops were firing into the backs of the people as they fled.

\* \* \*

**ON HORSEBACK, YAMADA GENZO WAS** surveying this scene as coldly as he'd regarded any battle with Korean rebels. Yamada paid little mind to their anger, but he couldn't tolerate their abject ignorance. What did they think to achieve by this? Did they really believe they could survive the twentieth century under their own feeble-minded monarch and his cross-eyed, sterile son? Their colonization by a world power was inevitable, and better Japan with its shared Asian heritage than America, England, or France. Japan was the sun that would shine on the entire continent and lead it to the new age of enlightenment.

His chestnut charger was picking its way through the crowd as if wading through mud, while on all sides the Koreans scattered away, pushing and screaming. He felt nothing, inured to the indistinguishability of people in combat. Every battle was the same—there was your side and there were your enemies, and nothing more. Yamada watched indifferently as several young students in secondary school were shot in the back. It was only when they fell forward onto the snow and blood spread across their bodies that he suddenly felt something like a sharp jolt. It reminded him, he realized, of the old merchant who had lain facedown on the snow, his warm blood soaking through his silk package. Yamada had known viscerally even then that Hayashi's execution of the man was wrongly done. A shiver ran through his spine. He turned to his left and saw Major Ito astride his black stallion. At Ito's order, delivered with crisp alacrity, the troops aimed their guns and fired.

Yamada's eyes found one man who was standing his ground as the other marchers fled the shower of bullets. Raising the Korean flag high in his right hand, he started running toward the troops. His face was brown, weathered, and common like a day laborer's; it made a stark contrast against his carefully combed black hair and the snow-white gentleman's robe, which had the appearance of

extra conscientiousness, as if he had known this would be his last day. In spite of himself, Yamada was arrested by this sight. Meanwhile, Ito effortlessly swung his legs over his horse and dismounted. The young officer's steps were calm and confident as he pulled out his sword and in one swift motion, struck down the protester's right arm. Severed above the elbow, it fell to the ground like a tree branch struck by lightning, still encased in a white sleeve.

The man screamed out in pain, but by an unaccountable strength of will, he remained standing. In the next moment, he bent down and picked up the flag with his remaining hand. Ito swung again without hesitation, and the left arm fell to the ground as well. The armless man tried to keep running, still shouting hoarsely, "*Manseh! Manseh!*" until Ito's sword plunged cleanly into the center of his back.

Yamada was still motionless on his horse while Ito wiped off his bloody sword on the dead man's white robes. Meanwhile, the marchers who saw this scene began rallying again. Somehow, they seemed to have regained their courage after witnessing the man's unbreakable will.

Another hailstorm rained upon the marchers, and this time, they took the bullets in the front. Piercing screams and smoke filled the avenue. Even Ito, now back on his stallion, was wiping the sweat on his brow and cursing. When the smoke cleared, Yamada saw that a group of women had made their way to the front with locked hands. With their elaborate braided crowns, expensive outfits, and fashionable makeup, it was clear to him that they were courtesans. The troops looked questioningly back at Ito, and even he was momentarily speechless. Yamada raised his hand, shouting, "Hold!"

At the same time, Ito ordered, "Fire!"

The troops hesitated, then started loading their guns again when Ito repeated his order. The courtesans still stood unflinchingly, only tightening their grip on one another. With their tear-stained, powder-streaked faces, hoarse voices, and bloated lips, they looked nothing like seductresses or even exactly like women. And yet, the very fact they were so undone made them feel so female to Yamada.

Guns were pointed at their chests when, farther along the avenue in front of number 10, a deafening cheer was heard.

"America! America! *America!*"

The cries filled the frosty white sky, and beneath it the sea of flags quivered.

"Hold!" Yamada shouted again, and the troops slowly lowered their guns, sensing an important shift in the situation. The gates of the American Consulate had just opened.

The crowd continued to chant as the consul-general walked out the gates, flanked by a red-haired deputy and a translator. A male student stepped forward and recited the Korean Declaration of Independence in English. "Help us. Please tell President Wilson what is happening here. Help us get justice," he said at the end, looking straight at the consul-general.

Yamada held his breath to see what the consul-general would do. If he closed the door of the consulate now, that would mean there would be no consequences from America—as well as the rest of the West.

"Yes, I will help you. I will tell President Wilson what I've seen," the consul-general said loudly in English, and the translator repeated it in Korean. "The world will hear your cries. America will not forsake you! I promise you that."

There rose a deafening cheer from the crowd. The red-haired young deputy sponged off his eyes with one hand and clasped the translator on the back with the other. With the shift in the crowd's energy, Yamada looked in the direction of Ito, who met his eyes and curled his lips in anger. They stood momentarily frozen, both knowing they could not attack in front of the consulate and risk American involvement. A silence enveloped them like volcanic ash. In the quiet, Yamada heard his arteries pulsing with no soldierly wrath, only a shameful hope that the carnage was over.

But after bowing and waving to the crowd several times, the consul-general stepped back inside the gates with his entourage.

As soon as they disappeared, Ito regained his composure. He was no longer sanguine, however—the unrest was far larger in scope than he'd first thought, and the Josenjings' unarmed resilience

was unexpectedly draining. His troops still stood in awe of the courtesans with locked arms. Ito sighed, swinging his body around to dismount from his horse in one swift motion. It was not his habit to kill women, but he'd always been accepting of the fact that this may need to change. Holding his rifle, he walked toward the leader of the courtesans.

"Do you know who I am? I'm the consort of Judge \_\_\_\_," the woman screamed in Japanese. Her lead-white face was distorted in fear, and Ito felt only repulsion.

"Whore!" Ito whacked her head with the back of his rifle and she fell forward, slamming her knees into the dirt. A soldier rushed to tie her hands together behind her back and take her into custody, and at this signal, a breathtaking chaos broke out all around. Ito stepped back to watch the protesters flee amid screams and gunshots. The Americans' doors remained closed. Their show of solidarity seemed to have been just that—a show.

An hour passed, or perhaps two—Ito could no longer be sure. He was accustomed to being in control of his situation, including and most of all his mind, but it had run out from underneath him like a wayward horse. When he regained his full senses, he saw that the troops were walking around, impaling anyone who still squirmed underneath their boots. Ito also looked down and saw a mangled heap of a man, more body parts than a whole human, whose only sign of life was blood-sputtering breath. Both arms were gone from his shoulders, making him look like a fish—and Ito realized that this was the same white-robed man he'd cut down earlier. In the nearly dead man's bloodshot eyes, there was still a pianissimo hope that he would somehow survive. It was like taking off a bee's wings and watching it crawl around—in Ito's experience, every single being did the exact same thing. Always clung, always chose suffering over death. Ito finished the man off with a thrust of his sword and then passed the hilt to his left hand. His right hand was cramping painfully; otherwise, he felt nothing.

The sun sank behind heavy black clouds, which looked as though they had been burned. In the semidarkness, Ito saw a flash of red some fifty yards away and recognized the flame-headed young



deputy from earlier in the day. He was hunched over a corpse; there was another, shorter white man next to him, also bent over at the waist and holding something small and rectangular in his hand. When Ito started walking toward them with a drawn pistol, they raised their hands above their heads and shouted in Japanese, "Don't shoot! Americans!"

Closer up, Ito saw that the small rectangle in the shorter man's hand was a vest pocket camera. "Associated Press. Don't shoot," the man repeated slowly. It was amusing how, even until the moment a bullet entered their skin, people refused to believe that they could die—despite the fact that death was the only thing everyone could be certain of getting, sooner or later. That was what life amounted to—an absurd disbelief, Ito sighed to himself. He raised his pistol, aimed at the photographer's forehead, and pulled the trigger.

The gun clicked, and the man's lids fluttered like a dying moth. He was still standing, unharmed, but with a quickly spreading stain on his crotch. The smell of his piss attacked Ito's nostrils anew. Ito had run out of bullets.

He holstered his pistol and drew his sword out instead. The two white men were shaking like leaves, sweat dripping down their faces. The red-haired deputy was whispering something under his breath with closed eyes. When they finally seemed ready to die, Ito sighed and slid his sword back in its sheath. His right hand was cramping ferociously, and he wasn't a butcher who would just hack away with his left hand.

"Go," Ito said. It had truly been a long day and he was tired to the very ends of his lashes. He'd done his part well, and needed rest. Before he could change his mind, he made a gesture like flicking off an annoying fly. And the two Americans, streaming with sweat, tears, and urine, fled behind the walls of their sanctuary.

# 10

## The Darkest Shade of Blue

1919

**ONCE HE'D SAFELY LED THE GANG BACK TO THEIR TENTS AFTER THE** March, JungHo left again by himself. He knew something serious was happening to Jade by the way he was being pulled toward her house, as though they were connected by an invisible line that she was now tugging on for his help. But when he arrived, the gate was firmly shut. He knocked on the door, nervous about being met by her servants, or worse, her family.

The door cracked open an inch and a gasp was heard. "Oh, it's you!" Jade said, sliding away the bolt. "Come inside quickly."

"Are you okay? What's the matter?" JungHo slipped in and Jade bolted the door shut again. Her face was flushed and wet with what could have been either sweat or tears.

"Aunt Dani and our maid Hesoon went to the protest today. They haven't come back and Luna's really sick," Jade said. "She's going to have her baby. I don't know what to do."

JungHo didn't know anything about childbirth except the fact that his mother had died giving birth to his younger sister. He kept this to himself and asked, "Who else is here? And how can I help?"

"Lotus is next to Luna. She's even more scared than I am." Jade wiped her face. "I don't know where we could find a midwife and it's still dangerous out on the streets."

"Okay, I'll bring help. You stay here." JungHo tried to remember anything he'd heard from his mother's midwife. He shouted over his shoulder as he ran out: "Make sure Luna stays warm and give her water!"

It was the time of stillness just before night turned into dawn. The sky was painted in the darkest shade of blue; birds would start singing exactly an hour later. JungHo flew through the neighborhood, where he knew every store, building, and even the jujube tree house that drew pregnant visitors around the clock. That was where he found the old midwife in her bed. Out of everyone in Seoul, she alone didn't seem taken aback by JungHo's appearance. All the babies of the area had long been born into her wrinkled hands, whether on the earth floor of mud huts or silk cots in mansions.

When the midwife arrived, she took a look at Luna and ordered the girls to bring her a pair of shears, some yarn, clean linens, hot water, and cold water. A few hours passed without much progress. Despite the girls' panic, the midwife went outside to take a break and sat next to JungHo in front of the garden. He didn't understand why she seemed so relaxed. Just before daybreak she disappeared inside again and left him to watch the gradual graying of the world alone.

JungHo dozed off for a half hour, perhaps more. He was startled awake when Jade came out and said with a smile, "It's a girl."

"How are they doing? And are you feeling okay?" JungHo asked.

"They're both sleeping. The granny said the baby is the prettiest newborn she's ever delivered—and she's even been midwife to a royal princess," Jade said, beckoning him to follow her to the kitchen. "Here, you can take whatever you'd like."

"I didn't do this to get food," JungHo said, confused and disappointed. "I wanted to help *you*."

"I know, JungHo. Thank you." Jade reached out and grabbed his hand. Her fingertips sent blooming stars up and down the length of

his arm. He wished he could stay standing there forever, holding hands with her. But then she let go and started wrapping food in a large kerchief.

"I'm sorry you can't stay . . . I have to go back to Luna now." She led him again by hand across the courtyard toward the gates, and suddenly stopped. "If you hadn't come, Luna might have died. It's strange how you showed up at that moment, because I was thinking about you. I didn't even know how you could help but you just came into my head."

He wanted to tell her that she was inside his head all the time, that she could very well be living there like it was her house, but a sudden wave of shyness stopped him. The morning sun was sparkling on the tips of her eyelashes; her wispy hair escaped from last night's braid and frizzed around her face like a cloud. She shone with the promise of something far greater than the eleven years of her life, and JungHo thought he could see and love even her future self.

"I'm going to tell Aunt Dani how you helped and she's going to reward you. She might even let you stay with us, in a spare room in the house. Then you wouldn't have to sleep outside in the cold. You'd always have plenty to eat here, and maybe you'd even get to go to school. JungHo, I'm so happy!" She smiled and let him pass through the gates.

\* \* \*

**ON HER THIRD MORNING IN JAIL,** Dani woke up with a nauseating wetness on her lower body and realized that she'd urinated in her sleep. Since getting arrested at the March, she had held herself instead of pissing straight onto the floor like the others. There was no chamber pot in the women's cell. They weren't getting water either, but she'd nonetheless felt the poison building pressure and spreading throughout her body, turning her skin yellow. Before she fell asleep the previous night, she—an intelligent and courageous woman—could think of no greater wish or pleasure than pissing like a waterfall, utterly alone.

As Dani gained full consciousness, the sheer, dumb, bodily relief turned into shame, and she cried for the first time since her arrest. No other inmate remarked on her accident or her sobbing, but they didn't comfort her either. In prolonged destruction, there was no spirit of unity such as the one they had shared in face of a quick and heroic death.

The door at the end of the hallway clanked open, and a soldier approached with a bucket. Dani braced for him to throw the water into the cell, as he did so the past two days to dampen the putrefying smells. But he set the bucket down and called out.

*"Kokoni Kimu Dani iru?"*

She stood up, wobbling on her weakened legs. *"Watashiga Kimu Dani desu."*

The soldier wrinkled his nose and put a fat finger to his nostrils, as if he could sense her stench growing stronger with her movement. His wispy mustache, waxed and curled like the f-hole of a violin, shook lightly as he beckoned her with his other hand.

"Out," he said, opening the door.

No other explanation was given, but Dani knew who had saved her. She stumbled out of the cell before the guard could change his mind. As he locked the door once more, she didn't look back at the others still inside.

**ALL DANI COULD DO** in the first few hours of her release was wash herself and drink water. Then she fell onto the clean warmth of her bed and slept for an untold amount of time. She felt she never wanted to go outside her room or speak to anyone again. She wished to hole up in her cocoon and jealously guard her body, energy, and sanity. It took her days to summon Luna's baby, and even then she barely held her or told the girls that they'd all done such a good job. Jade tried to tell her about her friend who brought over the midwife, but Dani merely shrugged.

"But without him, Luna would never have made it," Jade persisted in a small voice. "She could've died."

"That's enough," Dani snapped. "Luna didn't die, did she? Many, many people did die and I almost did as well. Now leave me alone, I

need to rest.”

While she recuperated, Dani was absorbed only in waiting for the Judge. A week later when he finally came to her house, she was wearing her most becoming outfit, a dress from Paris decorated with jet beads. A necklace of diamonds glittered at her throat, and a single magnolia was pinned to her chest. Her skin gleamed like marble under the black velvet; her red lips had the look of suede.

“You look pale,” the Judge said in Japanese upon seeing her. Dani smiled her most deferential smile, reaching out and taking his mottled hand. She raised it to her lips for a kiss, then pressed it against her décolletage.

“I haven’t been myself lately, as you know . . .” she replied. “Still, I wouldn’t be here if it weren’t for you.”

The Judge merely looked back at her, and Dani filled the void by pouring his sake. Next to the lacquered serving table, she’d put the rest of the earliest magnolias into a late eighteenth-century vase, knowing that would please her patron. With his cloudy eyes, the Judge saw and noticed everything and formed his conclusions quietly and precisely.

A faint yet voluptuous scent of the magnolias filled the room. But more than the flowers’ beauty and fragrance, the Judge appreciated that the tree outside was stripped bare of its first blossoms for his sake—and that Dani knew exactly how his mind worked. That was what he had always found most attractive about Dani: he admired her looks and poise, but was seduced by her singular ability to communicate beneath the surface. It was an elegance of the mind.

“You see, I have two friends who are still in custody. They are just as innocent as I am,” Dani began speaking again.

“One is my maid, Hesoon, who has served me faithfully over the years. She was only accompanying me on errands when we got caught up by the crowd. They put her in a different cell with all the commoners, so I don’t know how she could be doing, the poor girl. She knows nothing, understands nothing, and can be guilty of nothing,” Dani explained.

“The other is a cousin of mine. I don’t know his whole story, why he was arrested . . . But I am sure he is also innocent, as he is not

in the least political. As far as his family background goes, it is of the best: his father is a wealthy landowner down in the country, and his great-uncle is a former finance minister with a famous Jongno mansion that has ninety-nine rooms. He went to university in Tokyo, as well. His name is Lee MyungBo."

"Lee MyungBo? Your cousin?" the Judge asked with eyes lowered over his sake.

"Yes."

"I did not know you had Lee cousins. On your mother's side, I assume?"

Dani blushed slightly, before replying, "Yes. On my mother's side."

The Judge sighed. "Lee MyungBo is one of the thirty-three signers who were arrested at MyungWol. Even I can't just release him. But I can try to mitigate his sentence, and in the meantime, make him a bit more comfortable in jail. As for your maid, that should not be difficult."

Dani threw her bare arms around the Judge and pressed her soft body into his old, bony chest.

"Thank you . . . I will never forget your generosity," she whispered.

"Oh and one more thing, Dani," said the Judge. "I do like that diamond necklace on you. When I saw it, I knew you would be just the right woman for it. There is such a satisfaction to seeing something valuable find its rightful owner. That's why I bought it for you. And when I saw you for the first time, I thought the same thing about you belonging to me. I should like to think that you'd wear that necklace only for me. Don't put it on for other people . . . even cousins."

"Of course, I would never do anything to displease you," Dani said, smiling luminously and pretending to not understand. She wrapped both her hands around his and reverently brought them to her lips.

\* \* \*

**EACH TIME MYUNGBO LOST CONSCIOUSNESS**, the blackness overtook him more completely than before. This time, he'd been lashed with a studded whip and then confined in a body-tight niche carved into a wall for three days. When he woke up, he was in a different cell with a barred window set high on the wall. Without turning his head, he scanned the room and noticed a chamber pot in the corner. Still moving only his eyes, he looked down at his body, which had been bandaged and given clean clothes. He was even lying on a thin mat, although any comfort that may have afforded was obliterated by the excruciating pain that exploded from every part of his body. He did not even have the mental clarity to process his improved situation before blacking out once more.

\* \* \*

**HE OFTEN OPENED HIS EYES** to a bowl of water and some thin porridge next to him. Then without wondering how many days had passed, or what time of day it was, he gulped down the water first and spooned the porridge into his mouth. After that, he relieved himself and went back to sleep.

Time was a winter fog—gray, shapeless, indifferent to his existence. It passed on its own like a ship that sails without passengers. Or perhaps it was a ship that was carrying everyone else except MyungBo. Being left outside the world of time was a special kind of torture that said, You mean nothing. He was reminded he was still living only by feeling how much his beard had grown.

At some point, MyungBo was strong enough to stay awake for the arrival of his caretaker and to ask whether he could get some paper and a pencil. To his surprise, the guard brought those things the next day with the water and food. After drinking some water and leaving the porridge untouched, MyungBo crawled to his mat and began to work on a letter.

In the flashes of consciousness that were allowed him during his incarceration, MyungBo's thoughts had turned to his two mistakes. The first one was that he was wrong to resent his wife's pragmatism



while falling for Dani. For months leading up to the protest, he'd longed to see Dani and to talk to her about almost anything that came to his mind. At first, he'd chalked this up to simple admiration for a beautiful and intelligent woman, but his jealousy upon seeing SungSoo by her side forced him to admit that he was in love with her. Since he had long looked down on his friend's womanizing, he had been all the more confused about his attraction to Dani. But it all felt so faded and tarnished now. Upon thinking of her for the first time since his arrest, he only felt ashamed. Love was defined by how much one could suffer for another, by what you were willing to do to protect this person. It was a question of choosing the person with whom you'd like to hold hands on your last train ride. Now he knew the one he truly loved.

"To my beloved son HyunWoo," he started writing.

*How have you been? How is your mother? I hope that you two stayed warm and healthy over the winter. It's colder here, but thinking of you and your mother makes me feel better.*

*You just turned four, so you must be getting bigger now. I wish I could watch you grow up. I think often of the days when you were very little, and we three were together every night. You probably can't remember anything, but we were very happy back then. HyunWoo, listen to what your mother tells you. And when you're older, be the kind of person who is courageous in the face of the powerful, and generous toward the weak. That's all I wish for you.*

*I miss you both very much. I'm always watching over you.*

*—Your father*

MyungBo had started writing in small letters, thinking that he would fill up the whole page. In the end, however, he could fill no more than a third of the paper—it was too hard to say all that was in his heart. The guard, who had been under new orders to attend to the inmate's needs, mailed the letter to MyungBo's father's house, where it was forwarded to Shanghai by his younger brother.

The second and worst mistake of MyungBo's life was that he had put his faith in unarmed resistance. Like the other signers, he'd believed that they would gladly die if that could bring them closer to independence. But he now saw that the death of so many people was wasted. With both the leadership and civilians annihilated,

progress had not only stalled but even taken several steps backward. Nothing could change without force in the face of such inhumanity. MyungBo didn't know if he could get out of jail alive; in addition to his wounds, which kept reopening and festering, he had contracted tuberculosis. But if given another chance, MyungBo vowed he would win back their freedom at any cost—life for life, blood for blood.

When MyungBo's conditions stabilized against all odds, he was called into trial for treason and received a light sentence of two years. In prison, MyungBo was sometimes favored with a warm comforter or better food. He was even allowed to read a few books. Oblivious to the true reason for his special treatment, MyungBo now recalled Dani as he did SungSoo and his other schoolmates—infrequently and with a vague sense of embarrassment.

**SUNGSOO ALSO DIDN'T SPEND MUCH** time pining for his old friend after the March. He had been arrested in the late afternoon that day as he was taking coffee in his office with his publisher. He'd been arraigned on the charges of associating with MyungBo, but the raid into his publishing house had turned up no evidence. In fact, the deeper the investigators searched, the more evidence they found of his enduring friendship with the Japanese. The very next day, his father paid ten thousand won in cash for his bail and SungSoo was released, tired and in need of a bath but unharmed.

Neither SungSoo nor Dani reached out to the other afterward, and they both understood that their mutual silence was the end of their relationship. SungSoo was conscious that his intense desire for Dani had been fulfilled; there was something neat and deeply satisfying about its completion after all. Besides her splendid beauty, there was a passion and a mystery about her that would always entice him. He thought he may even miss her in the future. But for now, he was only glad of the natural end of their affair, which saved him the enormous headache of untangling feminine emotions. (And of apologizing when he didn't feel like it, just to appear to be a gentleman—women had such a desperation for apologies.) After all the chaos and uncertainties of winter, he felt as lighthearted as the parents of Gregor at the end of his favorite short story. His yearning

for a woman was replaced by that for industry and progress, and he congratulated himself on this positive new direction. He decided that in the spring, he would look into expanding his bicycle shop and then go for a long ride down in the countryside.

\* \* \*

**ON AN UNUSUALLY COLD APRIL** day, as Dani was cleaning the last remaining snow in the garden, the Judge's driver returned Hesoon to the house in a small wooden reliquary. The Judge hadn't found her in time. The two younger girls cried unceasingly for three days and nights. Luna, who had always been soothed by Hesoon's sturdy presence, named her daughter Hesook in her memory.

Dani, who looked down upon public tears, didn't grieve in front of the girls. It was all the more important to her that she stay resolute, because she believed that she was the reason Hesoon was dead. She'd brought her maid along to the March, and she'd failed to immediately call on the Judge for help. Instead of indulging in her pain, Dani did two things: not knowing how to reach Hesoon's family in Jejudo, she vowed to go to the South Sea one day to scatter the ashes herself. Then she applied herself with renewed energy to various projects around the house and appeared keen to forget everything that had happened. She had always been lively, but now she seemed to believe something dreadful would catch up to her if she slowed down even for a minute. She dressed as impeccably as ever, and tried new creams to hide the fact that she never slept through the night. She bought clothes and toys for Hesook and made nourishing postpartum soups for Luna. When it was warm enough Dani launched into spring cleaning, wiping down every corner of the house, putting away winter clothes, opening the drawers and airing out the linens.

"It's strange," she said, throwing her hands up in front of the paulownia-tree chest. "I can't find my favorite comforter—the one with peonies. It took my seamstress two months to hand-embroider the flowers with real gold thread."

Dani questioned the housekeeper, who swore she knew nothing. Unrelenting, Dani ordered all the wardrobes in the house to be opened and their contents laid out. At that point, Jade stepped forward.

"It was me, I'm so sorry," Jade said, staring down at her feet. "I should have told you, but my friend JungHo was sleeping out in the cold . . . I just wanted to help him." She began crying.

"What friend?" Dani asked in confusion.

"The same friend who fetched the midwife for Luna."

"And this friend sleeps outside on the streets?" Dani closed the chest and walked toward Jade.

"Yes. He doesn't have a home," Jade said. She'd barely finished answering when something exploded on her face. Dani had slapped her.

"Do you realize what you've done? You stole from me. That comforter was worth more than what Silver paid to buy you from your mother. Do you understand that?" Dani stared unblinkingly at Jade, whose face was streaming with hot tears. She nodded.

"Your value depends on how men see you. When they realize you spent time with some beggar boy, do you think they'd pay even a penny for your company?" Dani snorted. "Did you let him touch you?"

"No!" Jade said, indignant.

"You're to never, ever speak to that boy again. If you either steal anything else or talk to him, you'll be turned out of this house—and you'll find out for yourself how cold it is to sleep on the streets."

**SINCE THE NIGHT LUNA GAVE BIRTH,** JungHo had come by every afternoon hoping to meet Jade outside the house. He brought over the dog to cheer her up and, occasionally, pretty pebbles he'd found walking along the canal. But now she never came out of the gates.

One day he finally got up the courage to knock on the door. He heard light footsteps crossing over the courtyard and was bursting with excitement that it was Jade herself like last time. He was startled when a beautiful older woman opened the door, glaring at him sternly.

"You're the beggar boy hanging around my Jade?" she said. Without waiting for an answer, she disappeared for a moment and then returned with an envelope. She pressed it into his hand.

"That's for helping Luna last time. It's more money than a grown man makes in a week—you'd have enough food for a month at least. Take it and don't ever bother us or Jade again."

"I don't need this," JungHo managed to say, pushing the envelope back. "I just wanted to be her friend."

"You're a bold little thing, aren't you?" Dani snorted. "You can't mix with someone like Jade. She's going to be a courtesan, possibly the best one I've ever trained. And you, you're nothing but a nameless orphan."

JungHo wanted to tell her his name, but thought better of it and turned around. He could already hear Dani stepping back inside and bolting the door behind him. He still couldn't believe that Jade would not even say goodbye to him, that this was the end. He thought that if she knew how much he wanted to talk to her, she would find a way to meet him. So he came by every day and threw a pebble over the wall into the courtyard. Once, he tossed in a smooth, green sea glass that reminded him of her name. That was as clear a message as he could possibly send. But Jade never came out to meet him, and after a very long time, he stopped coming to her house for good.

## **Part II**

**1925–1937**

# 11

## Jungho Speaks

1925

**MY NAME IS NAM JUNGHO. YOU CAN'T START A STORY WITHOUT SAYING** your name. When I arrived in Seoul that was the first thing someone asked me. "What's your name, country bumpkin?" That was Loach by the way, who is still annoying as hell but I can't forget the fact that he is the oldest friend I've got.

I told my underlings that I was named after a legendary tiger in my village in the mountains. It's a story my older sister used to tell me and my younger sister before falling asleep. There was once a poor woodsman who lived alone with his mother. One evening as he was going back home after chopping wood in the mountains all day, a giant tiger appeared in front of him. Just as the tiger was about to pounce the woodsman started crying, saying, "Oh, my older brother! It is you! I have been waiting to meet you for years and years!"

The tiger got confused, stopped in his tracks and asked, "Um, what? What are you talking about, human?"

"Can't you remember, Older Brother?" The woodsman wept even louder. "Twenty years ago, you got up in the middle of the night and left our home. I woke up from my sleep and followed you. Then in the mountains you suddenly turned into a tiger as if from some dark

curse. That same curse must have erased your human memory too. Ever since, we've been hoping to see you again. Come, let's go home—our mother has been waiting for you all these years."

In case you're wondering the woodsman was lying to get out of this alive. But the tiger started thinking and he couldn't really remember how he used to be before he was a young tiger. Then he was like, "Oh my god, I must really have been a human before!" And he started crying and hugging the woodsman with his giant paws.

"I'm so glad we finally met, Younger Brother." The tiger wept. "I can't go home looking like this. I don't want to scare our mother. But I'll always watch over you."

The woodsman hugged the tiger one last time and went back home. The next morning he found a dead rabbit in his courtyard. So he said, "That tiger really thinks we're his family!" After that there was a deer. And so the tiger kept bringing them food and the woodsman and his mother never went hungry.

Couple of years went by like that and the mother died of old age. The tiger stopped dropping by with food after that. A while later the woodsman was coming down the mountain when he ran into three tiger cubs. Each cub was wearing a white hemp ribbon around his tail. The woodsman asked, "Why are you wearing those ribbons, tigers?" Then one of them replied,

"Our grandmother was a human who lived in the village down the mountain. She passed away and our father grieved for months and couldn't eat or sleep. He died of sadness in our cave and now we're in mourning."

The woodsman cried real tears then and felt sorry for tricking the loyal tiger. So he built a monument to the tiger which was just a huge stone with some carvings in our village square. I couldn't read it but this really did exist next to the ginkgo tree by the well. So that's why I'm named JungHo—*Jung* meaning righteous, *Ho* meaning tiger—I'd say to my underlings. And even the ones who had heard similar stories at their own villages believed me.

I'm not lying about the tiger monument but the truth is that when I was born my father was overjoyed to finally have a son, so he went to the local astrologer and got my name made. My father



paid a rabbit for a real name of Chinese characters when plenty of people just named their kids after the first animal or flower that grabbed their eyes, like Loach for instance who claims his mother had mad cravings for loach soup while she was pregnant with him hence his name. My sisters were also just called May and June after their birth months so that's how much my father loved me specially. The reason I don't tell this version is that every year I remember less about my father and whenever I talk about him it's like opening the lid of a boiling stew and letting the steam get out so there's less of the good stuff in the end. That's why I don't talk about him unless I have to and most of the time it's enough to look at his cigarette case and my mother's ring to remember that I'm not nobody but Nam JungHo.

**EVEN LONG AFTER WE MOVED** out from under the bridge, I still used to go back there from time to time. It didn't make me feel happy—the sight of the muddy water, the stony banks where we used to sleep on nothing but mushy straw mats. But I couldn't help but feel drawn to it. Do you ever go back to the place where you used to live and feel like you've been drinking soju on an empty stomach? Your head turns all of a sudden and you miss things like you don't even know what. I wouldn't call that happy but I would sometimes be in the mood for that kind of feeling.

For the longest time of course I didn't have enough things to eat let alone a drop of liquor and our goal was to keep a steady pace of eating once every two days. We were all starving every second we were awake and even in our dreams. I was often the hungriest of all of us because I'd give my portion to whoever looked like he was at the end of his rope. Sometimes when I handed my piece of dumpling to some kid cold sweat would break on my back because I'd be that hungry. I didn't do that to buy anyone's loyalty but ultimately that was how all these guys became closer to me than real brothers. Word got around that Nam JungHo under the bridge was the chief of all Jongno street children and that he feeds everyone who is loyal to him. By the time I was sixteen I had over forty kids under my command.

It was clear then that we couldn't keep on living under the bridge much longer. It was a godawful place to live even for beggars and in summer the mosquitoes attacked every inch of you and in winter you froze to death almost every night and let me tell you, that gets old after a while. Whenever there was any kind of riot our tents of sacks and straw mats would be torn apart and destroyed. We hid in crannies in the levee that no one else could find and watched as the police burned everything we had down to the last wooden bowl and spoon. This was when Loach convinced me to change ourselves from beggars to "protectors." Mind you this was not an easy thing to do to just barge into a little Chinese restaurant and demand fees for protecting the business from other gangs. Every neighborhood in every district of Seoul was claimed by one of several gangs both Japanese and Korean and those borders were strictly respected in order to avoid full-out war. I was starting from scratch having claimed no street as my own and with only a ragtag group of beggar boys who knew nothing about fighting. In fact if we weren't in such a desperate situation I wouldn't have had the courage to demand money from an elderly man who'd done nothing wrong to any of us. But it was shockingly easy at the end of the day. He took one look at me flanked by Loach and YoungGu and handed me the money with downcast eyes. I counted the money and gauged the going rate of these "protection fees" in the neighborhood and asked for twice that at the café next door. Here the owner was a lady in a floral-patterned blouse and heavy white makeup and she reminded me of a full moon with eyes drawn in charcoal. I'd seen enough women and girls around Seoul to know that she wasn't beautiful with or without makeup but the simple fact that she was female made my demand even more uncomfortable and embarrassing. But this lady listened to me and handed me the money even giving a slight bow of her head.

Once word got around that we'd been claiming our territory the inevitable happened—that is, the other gangs started attacking us. By all normal odds we should have been utterly destroyed by these bullies who were older and more experienced than us, but we surprised everyone including ourselves by winning and reclaiming

our rights. This may sound like bragging but fighting comes very easily to me. I once fought six guys simultaneously on my own and they had long Japanese swords but I ended up putting my knife straight through their leader's left palm. He dropped the sword from his right hand and before it hit the ground I grabbed it and sliced off his ear with it and said next time I will strike off his head instead. No one challenged me after that and even the police stayed away from threatening my group.

Some people can't hide their surprise when they see that I, the skinny and short one, am the chief and the best fighter in the whole district. They started saying that this was because I was the son of a tiger hunter who used to kill beasts with his bare hands, which of course wasn't true but I didn't exactly deny it. What I am is just faster than anyone else and I know how to use my opponent's own power and weight against him and most importantly I am not afraid of sticking things into people if they get in my way. But I didn't have to resort to such extreme measures to get the owner of that Chinese restaurant to "rent out" his back room to us for free and I settled several small groups in similar places nearby.

Pretty much overnight, we'd gone from sleeping outside to having a floor and a ceiling over our heads. This was actually not easy at first. It was hard to fall asleep at night with the walls that seemed to close in on me. It was so hot that I actually missed sleeping under the bridge and even those nights when you'd have to wake up every hour and shake the snow off the tent so it doesn't collapse. The others also felt the same way and some kids actually ran away. YoungGu was shocked when I told him he couldn't bring the dog into the room and that they'd have to sleep separately for the first time in years. The dog was tied to the chestnut tree in the back courtyard by the outhouse and for a good while it howled for entire nights. YoungGu thought I was sleeping but I know he snuck out in the middle of the night to go snuggle the dog and calm it down. He has always been and still is a complete mush. I can't even believe that he was chief before I replaced him because despite being almost a head taller and broader than I am the guy has zero meanness inside. He's not bad at fighting but I know he would

rather do something else—perhaps become a Chinese restaurant owner himself.

In the past three years I've been expanding our territory as much as possible while not upsetting the careful checks and balances of the Jongno underworld. Every day I send out my guys in groups of three or four. They hit up the same joint about once a week and we're careful not to bleed anyone dry because that's when real resentment sets in and you have to know how to not make people desperate. That's another thing that makes me a great fighter and if you're interested in learning my secrets to winning every fight then forget everything else and just remember that desperate people are the most dangerous.

Occasionally some owner of a bar or an apothecary will refuse to pay up and that's when I'd be called in to put him in his place. There was an unfortunate instance of an old and rich herbalist who somehow believed that I wouldn't actually dare harm him and after my guys repeatedly failed to get paid I had to show up to his joint. The old man had a snowy white beard and was dressed in a traditional white jacket almost like a gentleman. He looked at me straight in the eyes and shouted something about how he was old enough to be my grandfather and how he had no fear of hooligans like us. Behind him stood his son with his young and pretty wife and their little child. A handsome and prosperous family. But if I didn't make an example out of him then all the neighborhood joints would defy me and we'd go back to living under the bridge or worse. With a flick of my hand all of my guys picked up and smashed the jars of herbs and medicines on the ground and the pretty daughter-in-law and her baby started screaming at once. The son threw himself in front of the wall of little wooden drawers, which I took to mean that they held the most expensive ingredients. I knocked him down to the ground with a single punch to his nose which broke with a satisfyingly loud crunch. Then I started pulling out the drawers and dumping their contents on the ground as the old herbalist stared with his mouth open. Even I knew that some of these leaves and tiger bone powder and bear gallbladder and wild ginseng were worth their weight in gold. Before long the old man was on his knees

begging me to stop while the daughter-in-law scrambled to get us the money.

This is how I've been able to keep all of us fed and clothed. We have saved up quite a bit of cash since we can go to any of "our" restaurants and eat a good meal. It's the same thing with clothes and shoes and alcohol. But again I warn my guys not to go overboard with squeezing the businesses too hard. Since about a year ago I've even been paying rent to the Chinese restaurant though we still occasionally eat black bean noodles and sweet-and-sour pork for free. I've noticed though that whenever we order food there YoungGu looks deeply uncomfortable and it probably has to do with the owner's young daughter, who brings bones and scraps to YoungGu's dog and then shyly runs away.

This brings me back to why I came to the bridge tonight. My feet lead me here unconsciously whenever I need some time to think. I rested my forearms on the stone railing and gazed down at the matte black surface of the canal. It undulated like the back of some sea monster. The yellow lights of the nearby bars and shops could not reach the water and I had the strange feeling that I was the only one to ever see it like this. I felt very alone but I wasn't craving the company of my guys or even Loach, who is at the end of the day my best friend. I can't really talk to him about what's been bothering me. We were all teasing YoungGu about that girl and making dirty jokes and asking when he'll finally lose his virginity and I noticed that only Loach wasn't filled with the same mixture of envy and fascination as the others. He went along with it wearing that sly smile—he still smiles the same way—but as if he wouldn't keep that conversation going on his own. Loach never hoots at women or gets shy around them which are really the only two ways we know how to act around females. I get the feeling that my confession about a girl will get the same kind of cold reaction from him and so I'd rather keep this to myself.

Here's what happened. Last week I was taking a walk by myself near the Great East Gate and looking around the different shops and establishments in the area. Since I first came here Seoul has become a completely different place. Where there used to be little straw-

roofed cottages there are now bars, cafés, dance halls, restaurants, banks, offices, and shops reaching up to four or five stories. Before there were plenty of men in suits but hardly any women in Western clothes. Now the streets lit brightly by gas lamps are filled with these so-called Modern Girls with their cropped and waved hair and red lips and short skirts. Of course we try to get their attention but they speed away either like they can't see us or they're scared of us. Above all the people walking or riding their bicycles or spilling out of the streetcars, there are electric wires crisscrossing dangerously close to the tiled roofs. The air in Seoul smells of rain, cooking oil, garbage, pine trees, persimmon, perfume, red bean paste, hot metal, and snow. It changes by the season and the time of day and the neighborhood.

So I was walking one day drinking in the smells and taking note of the streets. It was a beautiful fall day with a perfectly blue sky and I was just about to cross the avenue when a streetcar stopped right in front of me. A girl hurried over to get on it—and a moment before boarding for no apparent reason she turned around and looked straight at me. That split second just took my breath away. She looked almost nothing like when I last saw her, but I knew it had to be Jade. I hurried over and queued up behind the other passengers and got on the streetcar. It was packed as always and I was anxious that I wouldn't be able to find her but after some jostling around I saw that she was seated with a friend near the back. As they kept whispering to each other and smiling I noticed that they were both wearing their hair in the braided updo of married women. But based on their gold-embroidered blouses and skirts and white powder and rouge I put two and two together and figured out that she'd become a courtesan. It immediately led to a sort of sinking feeling which I brushed aside.

The girls soon got off the streetcar and I followed them. It turned out that they were going to the Grand Oriental Cinema and I spent the last remaining money I had on buying a ticket while worrying that I would lose them inside the dark theater. How was I going to find her in a crowd of a thousand people? But the crazy thing is that even though it was packed I found a seat just a few

rows in front of them. Every few minutes I turned my head around to look at her face, which was lit up by the light of the black-and-white projection on the screen. That look of concentration as she followed the film was so cute, so familiar. It made me miss her all over again. After her aunt told me to stay away I had never run into her no matter how hard I tried. She was grown up now and her makeup made her look even older but her eyes still looked exactly the same. It was a lot for me to take in and my stomach dropped ten feet into the ground and I felt like shouting or punching something just to think this through although I stayed in my seat quietly like everyone else.

After the film ended I got anxious that they would take the streetcar and disappear into the city but I managed to catch up to her just outside the front doors of the cinema and tapped her lightly on the shoulder. She turned around and fixed her bright eyes on me and it was like when on summer nights I used to lie down by the canal and look up at the sky. The dizziness of stars. I didn't know looking into another person's eyes could feel like that.

"Jade, it's me. It's JungHo," I said finally.

She looked confused and apologetic and I was starting to think that I got a wrong girl but then her face lit up and it was like when birds start singing in the morning.

"JungHo! It's you!" She laughed and grabbed my two hands in her own and jumped up and down like a little girl. "It's been so many years. You look so well. I've missed you so much."

Now it was my turn to be confused because she looked so happy to see me and I couldn't handle the fact that the most beautiful girl in Seoul was holding on to my hands in broad daylight in front of hundreds of people.

"We have to catch up, JungHo. You remember Lotus, right?" She signaled at her friend. They whispered for a bit and Lotus shot me a funny look before leaving on her own and it made me conscious about what I was wearing. They were some things I picked up at one of the tailors in our territory—fairly new but not clean and a bit too big for me.

"Let's go for a walk." She linked her arm in mine which was something she'd never done when we were little. She was so close I could smell her hair combed with some perfumed oil. I tried to keep my cool as we made it out of the city center and up a little hill. The stores turned to houses and kitchen gardens and finally a bit of empty plot of pines and underbrush. She sat down on a rock and patted the spot next to her.

We didn't say anything to each other for a while and just looked down at Seoul bathed in pink from the setting sun. I was wondering how I could even begin to tell her how much I missed her. She opened her mouth first.

"You look well. I can see things worked out for you."

It wasn't as though I looked rich or even like a normal person but just that I no longer looked like someone who slept outside. I blushed.

"We made it work, somehow. I do this and that," I said and then changed the subject. "And you've become . . . blindingly beautiful."

She laughed her morning-bird laugh. "I've become a courtesan. We all look like this."

"No. Not all. Definitely not all," I said. I wanted to take her hand again but she didn't seem to want to do that. Instead she looked far down at Seoul like she was thinking of something else.

"I'm so sorry about how my Aunt Dani treated you. And for never saying goodbye."

"It's okay. It's in the past," I said because I didn't want her to ever feel bad on my behalf. I'd rather get my heart stabbed a thousand times than see her unhappy because of me.

"Aunt Dani forbade me from going outside the house for three months. If I got caught talking to you, I would've been kicked out. Now that I'm older, I can see she was trying to protect me. But it was still . . ." She hesitated and I realized she didn't like to say anything bad about her aunt. "She's a talented, stunning, formidable woman. You can't help but admire her no matter what."

"I understand," I said. It didn't matter what Aunt Dani did because now we were together. I already forgave everything.



"But even when I was under house arrest, I knew you came by. Didn't you throw pebbles into the garden?"

"So you saw them?" I was so happy my whole body felt jittery and light.

"Yes, and there was even one really pretty green one, wasn't there?"

This was why Jade wasn't just beautiful. She was special like nobody else in the world. If only I could I would pluck off the stars from the night sky and toss them all into her garden and that wouldn't even be enough. This was a thought that came to my head long afterward but in the heat of the moment I just really wanted to hold her.

"Yes, I meant that one especially for you. Green like your name," I managed to say and she smiled.

"I have an idea for introducing you to Aunt Dani and making her see that you're different now," she said. "Tomorrow night, Lotus, Luna, and I are performing in a benefit show at Joseon Theatre. You should come. And after the show when we come out, you can act like you just spotted me and come say hello. In front of all the people, Aunt Dani wouldn't be able to say anything. Besides, she'll see that you've grown up to be a perfectly presentable young man."

Now this is why I'm so worried and can't sleep. Yes I'm no longer wearing rags but even I know I'm not a perfectly presentable young man the way she put it. Definitely not someone who normally hangs around courtesans. High-class courtesans like her would only have love affairs with rich men. I'm sure she has dozens of lovers who are showering her with gifts and money even as I'm dreaming of her.

For the first time in my life, I'm nervously happy. Usually I'm neither nervous nor happy because I have no expectations about anything. Now I have something I want and suddenly all my decisions matter more.

From my inside pocket I pull out the cigarette case and the ring. I like to look at them sometimes when I'm alone and in a missing mood. They feel cool in my palm like pebbles by the riverbank. My father had held on to these even though he could have bought

medicine or chicken broth that would have prolonged his life. He never explained why.

When I was a kid I used to have this belief that these two things were good luck charms that could somehow keep me from harm. My father's cigarette case and my mother's silver ring are the only things I have left from them besides my name and my own body I guess. My talismans are the reason I'm not afraid of death which is why I survived through all these years. Now that I'm older I know that life is not about what keeps you safe, but what *you* keep safe, and that's what matters the most. When I see Jade tomorrow I want to explain all of this to her and tell her that she's the one I want to keep safe more than anything else.

# 12

## A Marriage Proposal

1925

**AT ELEVEN O'CLOCK IN THE MORNING, JADE ROSE FROM BED AND** started getting ready for her day. Her maid brought a cup of hot barley tea for her, then she washed her face and settled in front of her vanity inlaid with mother-of-pearl. She patted on finely milled seashells over her skin, and the excess powder bloomed into silky clouds against the morning sun. She drew a kohl pencil over her thin and round eyebrows—plucked according to the current mode—and smudged the same pencil around her eyes. Finally, she carefully painted on the rouge over her lips. When this was finished, her maid combed and twisted her hair up into a chignon that was waved and loosened around the scalp in the Western fashion, securing it with a coral *binyuh*.

Once Jade looked in the mirror to study the whole effect, she couldn't help but break into a happy smile at confirming her suspicion that she was indeed quite pretty. Even her teeth had behaved themselves as her features settled down—they were only slightly crooked now. She was at that point in life when a girl is constantly wondering how she appears to others, and whether and how much she is attractive.

Since Jade officially debuted at age fifteen, she'd had a steady stream of admirers who requested her at parties and even sought her out at home. These men spent a fortune on spending a night with her and gave her periodic gifts of money without her even asking, as older and shrewder courtesans were apt to do. While this was going on, she would imagine that these men had true feelings for her, and that she herself was attracted to them. In recent years, there were courtesans who married upper-class men, intellectuals, and artists, and lived out the rest of their lives as beloved wives and mothers in respectable families. Each time this happened, the entire society turned to gossiping about the free-spirited lovers at every gathering, and in newspapers and magazines. Jade hoped she would also fall in love with such a kind and preferably handsome gentleman. But thus far, all the men stopped calling on her after just a few months. Certainly no one wrote letters or gave her anything that could be considered a token. She soon learned that the more eager the men were to end the liaison, the greater their gifts of cash. She also became bashful remembering how, as a child, she had thought it would be so easy to fall in love and receive rings and diamonds as her two foster mothers had. Jade was increasingly weighed down by doubt that she was not beautiful enough or—more critically—that she was not good at giving pleasure, despite the illustrated books that Dani used to teach her and Lotus. If she didn't secure a longtime patron like Dani had, Jade wasn't sure how she could pay her own way beyond the age of thirty. Many formerly well-off courtesans fell into desperate positions because they weren't smart enough or because they were simply unlucky. But this point felt far enough away in the future that the fear was easy to brush aside.

Once she was finished dressing, Jade went to join Dani, Lotus, Luna, and Hesook for lunch. Dani was retired now; at thirty-nine, even the most sought-after grand courtesans stopped going out to parties and taking new lovers. The Judge had passed away in 1922, and Dani spent her nights all alone. She was still as graceful as ever, always immaculately made-up and perfumed whether she went out or stayed in. She busied herself with drinking coffee, reading,

gardening, playing with Hesook, and knitting sweaters—a new hobby—and never showed any signs of missing her previous life. When Jade walked in, she was reading the newspaper on the new sofa, in a navy sweater that she'd made herself and a slim charcoal skirt that fell just below her knees; a lit cigarette dangled precariously between her fingers.

Luna was seated across from Dani, watching Hesook play with a toy on the floor. Some girls who are extraordinarily pretty at fifteen or sixteen grow up to be merely normal or even unattractive women. That was not the case with Luna, whose shocking beauty as a young girl had matured into a soft, full radiance. Jade thought that she was less cruelly perfect and more alluring, with raven hair and rounded ivory cheeks like seashells. Men paid dearly for the privilege of sitting next to Luna at banquets and studying her celebrated figure up close.

When the three women and Hesook were seated at the table, Lotus finally arrived, smiling confidently and smelling of perfume. Lotus was always in demand for parties because of her splendid voice. Not only did she know the full traditional repertoire, but she also sang the jazz songs and the ballads that flowed out from the dance halls at every sundown and seeped into dark alleys by night. She always started with an upbeat, well-known love song. Then as conversation languished, candles burned low, and guests gazed into the half-empty bottles with a faraway look, she ended with a slow waltz in three-quarter time. By then, even the men who didn't notice her at the beginning of the party would be enraptured by her voice. Many of them fought the tears in their eyes while they listened, and scrambled to offer her drinks and have her sit next to them. Jade knew how much Lotus relished this power of her voice, always warmly complimented her on her singing, and lashed out at anyone, man or woman, who criticized her friend for being homely.

\* \* \*

**WHEN JADE FIRST ARRIVED IN SEOUL**, the city had been filled with thousands of rickshaw drivers who ran along the boulevards and

narrow streets pulling well-fed and robust men in starched collars and wool suits. Now, streetcars and taxis were common, and the only customers who still faithfully hired rickshaw drivers were the courtesans. They tipped better than the wealthy gentlemen, and many refused to take taxis and streetcars out of principle.

In spring, the rickshaw drivers' guild had started pooling money to establish a private school for their children, and the courtesans decided to help raise funds with a benefit performance. All of Seoul was expected to be there, from men of leisure to the intellectuals, artists, wealthy housewives, students, shopkeepers, and even laborers. Around seven hundred courtesans from all five guilds had volunteered to perform, and of them, both Jade and Lotus had been selected for solos.

Waiting in the wings, they hid their nervousness by peeking out at the courtesans on the brightly lit stage. The women were awash in golden light as they performed a traditional dance with fans, arranging themselves into a circle like a blooming water lily. They shimmered and waved in unison, and looking at one individually was as pointless as focusing on a single petal of a rose. Even Luna did not stand out from the rest, which was why the head of their guild had put her in this dance. She smiled, glided, and spun dutifully and joylessly, and exited the stage relieved to escape the bright lights.

When the theater fell silent, Lotus walked out to meet the blinding yellow light. A piano had been set up in the center, where her accompanist in slicked-back hair and tailed evening suit was waiting for her. She turned to the audience and began singing her signature waltz. Her voice reached all the way to the back of the theater, caressing each listener with the haunting melody; the memories of the deepest heartbreaks and losses were laid bare, both the things one had forgotten and the things one wished to forget but could not. Under the cover of the darkness and her voice, it was possible to let their tears come out. No one could fail to be mesmerized by her or fall a little in love with her. She received a standing ovation and was called back out to the stage by the applause. Once Lotus returned to the wings the second time, Jade enveloped her in a tight embrace.

"It was incredible, even for you," Jade whispered. "No one will be able to think of anything else from tonight."

"Well, we'll see if they remember my song after they see you!" Lotus said, beaming nonetheless.

"I'm terrified of going after you! Good thing there's an intermission between us." Jade laughed nervously. She was already dressed in a black robe and a red overjacket, which was cinched below her chest with a crimson girdle before reaching all the way to the floor. A traditional black military hat, wide brimmed and decked with a red horsehair tassel, was secured above her braided chignon; this juxtaposition of a masculine ornament against her feminine face and coiffure made her look even more charming than usual. In each hand, Jade grasped a slim half sword that was about the length of her lower arm. When the intermission ended and the crowd settled beyond the curtains, Jade tucked the swords in each of her sleeves, gave a nod to her best friend, and walked out onstage.

The curtains parted and revealed Jade, seated calmly under a soft yellow light. The drum beats began, and she was roused slowly with gentle movements of her hands and shoulders, her head still bowed. She rose to standing with that same slow beat, and swirled around the stage so that her skirts billowed upward. For a while she floated as effortlessly and gently as the fan dancers had. Then the piercing sound of a flute was added to the drums, which picked up the pace to a marching speed. On cue, Jade picked up the trailing hems of her red overjacket and tied them around her waist like a sash. When she turned to face the audience, they saw swords that had magically appeared in each hand, glistening under the spotlight. A length of chain connected the blade to the hilt, so that with each swerve of her wrists, the blades rotated around in a circle. She started by simply spinning the blades, her elbows close to her body. Then as the drumbeats picked up and the flute rose with them, she spun faster and more daringly, the blades swinging close to each other and to her body and yet never clashing. Unlike the fan dancers, Jade was not smiling. Though the ornamental swords had no edge, she looked as lethal as a murderess. The men in the audience desired to be at her mercy, and women desired to know

what it was like to move so wildly and yet gracefully. Those in the front rows could see the sweat beading on her powdered forehead, the sharpened breathing as the dance wore her out, and the solemn eyes that made her look much older than her years. Not aged, but ageless. She looked magnificent.

The drums crescendoed to a sudden halt and she sank to the floor, driving the sharp points of the swords onto the stage. The audience was utterly silent. The lights went out, and in the darkness, Jade scrambled back up and ran to the wings. As she peeled off her hat from her sweaty forehead, a scattered applause started in the seats. Within seconds, it grew to a roaring ovation, and the lights brightened the stage once more.

"Go! Go out onstage!" Lotus whispered urgently, pressing the hat back on top of Jade's damp head. Jade ran to the spotlight, holding her hat in place with one hand and picking up her skirt with the other. When she appeared again, the roar of claps and whistles became even louder. Whole rows of guests started rising to their feet. She bowed, and bowed again, tears forming on the corners of her eyes.

When the final act ended, Jade, Lotus, and Luna exited through one of the backstage doors leading to the quiet alley behind the theater, tired and still in their costumes. Dani was already waiting for them there, wrapped in her fur coat even though it was, in early October, not too cold. In fact, it was a clear, lovely autumn evening with an invigorating chill and the touching sound of crickets.

"You girls were wonderful, all of you . . . You made me so proud," Dani said, tenderly hugging each girl in turn. Everyone was smiling, interrupting one another's chatter to impatiently point out another detail from the performance.

Under the cover of general good cheer, Jade looked around furtively, caught sight of JungHo's silhouette, and gave a tiny wave with her hand. Though visibly red even under the cover of darkness, JungHo marched up bravely to the circle of women.

"Jade, I'm JungHo. It's been such a long time . . ." he broached. "I was surprised to see you in the performance. People couldn't take their eyes off of you."



"JungHo! How wonderful to see you after so many years. I didn't recognize you at first." Jade laughed. "You've grown so much!"

Dani narrowed her eyes at JungHo and looked at him up and down. She had two modes of conduct, extremely subtle and completely direct, depending on how she viewed the situation and the person in question. It was impossible to say which she would choose for JungHo.

"It's great to see you again, Aunt Dani." JungHo addressed her boldly, as if she hadn't rudely cast him out years before.

"Yes, you've grown up. I suppose." Dani smiled. But that was the extent of her jab because she was immediately taken up by another stranger.

"Ah, so you are here! How glad I am to find you. I didn't see you among the performers getting ready for the reception, and worried that I missed you," the stranger said. He was a middle-aged man wearing round-framed glasses, pinned collars, and a slim black tie. He had a distracted and excitable manner of speaking, and it was unclear whom he was addressing.

"How may we be of service?" Dani asked in a polite tone she used only when she was being cold.

"Ah, yes. Here is my business card." He fished for a card from his inside pocket and gave it to Dani with both hands. Having done so, he turned to Jade.

"I'm the owner and director of Joseon Theatre. You made quite an impression today, Miss Jade! I saw your name on the program. I've never been so moved by—excuse me—a courtesan's dance as I have been tonight. I've never thought much of the traditional dances, palace-style or otherwise—but you've changed my mind. People were moved to patriotism by your performance!" The director paused, pushing his glasses back up his nose.

"And I thought, I must convince you to join our in-house troupe. We perform seven nights a week here—tragedies, comedies, variety shows, storytelling . . . You name it. We have the best actors and actresses in Seoul. Anyone who becomes anyone in the city does so on our stage." He smiled gratuitously, grasping both of Jade's small

white hands in his own big brown ones. Then looking about him, he noticed Lotus and turned his attention on her.

"And you're that brilliant singer who sang that waltz. What a voice! I couldn't believe my ears. You're far better than the singers who are popular these days. They hit the notes but have no soul . . . I would very much like to speak to you as well," the director said excitedly. "Well, what are we waiting for? Why don't we go to the reception to talk all of this over? No, that would be too noisy and distracting, on second thought. Allow me to take you to a nice restaurant somewhere to discuss this over supper and some drinks," he said, glancing back at Dani, for he noticed that the girls were looking inquiringly at her.

"Those are overflowing compliments, although I think we're all quite tired after such a long night," Dani said haughtily. She was irritated at barely being addressed, just as all such charming women are secretly slighted by not being the focus in a group. "But if you'd like to call on us tomorrow afternoon to discuss these things, we'd be honored," she said, and rattled off their address.

"No, the honor is all mine. Tomorrow then, tomorrow," he said, politely bowing his head a few times before taking his leave.

In the flurry of exchange with the director, JungHo had been nearly forgotten. Jade now turned to him and smiled, because after such an exciting conversation even Dani couldn't darken the mood. In fact, she seemed to have decided that brushing over the past was the best policy. She even nodded curtly at JungHo before sweeping the girls away like a dignified hen.

"Goodbye, JungHo. You can come see me anytime. I'm always home at noon," Jade whispered, giving him a light pat on the shoulder. JungHo looked like someone drowning in a sea of happiness. How lovely, easy, and natural it was to be reunited with him! Jade thought to herself before running to catch up with the others. Dani and Luna had already left on a rickshaw; Lotus was calling out to her from another one, driven by a young man in a worn black coat. He helped Jade up the carriage and then they were on their way, a soft wind grazing their ears and stars streaming up ahead.

"This is the most amazing night of my life! Jade, we'll join Joseon Theatre! Who cares about pouring drinks for rich playboys. We'll live like true artists!" Lotus shouted, grabbing her friend's hand and shaking it up and down.

"It's like a dream, isn't it? We came here just with some small clothes in our arms . . . Do you remember how we were so little, the four of us all fit in one rickshaw?" Jade laughed. Her friend was on the verge of being known as the best singer in Seoul. And without any ambition or early promise, she herself had succeeded far beyond anyone's expectations. At seventeen, it was impossible to imagine that anything other than triumphs and joys awaited her from this night forward.

They soon arrived in front of their house, and the driver helped them down from the rickshaw. He did this quickly and attentively, and without any slavishness or secret rudeness that sometimes characterized these laborers. While on the taller side and broad-shouldered, the rest of his body tapered rapidly even under his oversize coat, which was patched on the elbows with brown corduroy fabric. Noticing this, Jade was moved to sympathy, as often happens to people who feel particularly and unfairly blessed.

"You poor darling, you look like a student," she said, gazing at his serious face. "Are you going to school?"

The rickshaw driver's eyes, not large but attractive, lit up at her question. "Yes, I go to night school, miss," he answered.

"So you work all day and evening, and go to school at night. Do you ever sleep?" Jade muttered with a smile. "Poor thing. We just did a benefit show to raise funds for a school for rickshaw drivers' children. And my friend and I both had a very good night. Here, use this to buy yourself a new coat," Jade said, handing him enough for an entire day's work. She linked arms with Lotus and passed through the front gate, which the maid was holding open for them, hopping in place to keep warm. Jade was conscious of being watched by the rickshaw driver, which made her laugh louder and lean even more affectionately on Lotus.

"If you liked that handsome driver, you should've invited him in." Lotus giggled as they crossed the courtyard.

"He's a poor student and I was just being nice," Jade protested. She couldn't act friendly to anyone, even a rickshaw driver, without Lotus mocking her. Even a boy barely old enough to be in high school.

"Then I can have him?" Lotus asked, and Jade shrugged her shoulders. "Fine, we'll share. He seems strong enough to handle the two of us. Oh, I bet we can both ride his rickshaw all night . . ." Then they broke out laughing.

\* \* \*

**"I AM SO GLAD YOU'VE COME.** What would you like to drink? I have a very good sake. Also, an excellent cognac. I developed a taste for it when I was doing my European tour, and now I confess it's become one of my favorite things," Ito Atsuo said, letting go of his friend's hand and settling himself on the settee with obvious pleasure. As he spoke he gestured to the high-backed chair opposite from him, and Yamada Genzo slid onto it with the careful manner of a guest visiting a friend's home for the first time.

"If it's one of your favorite things, let's indulge you a bit." Yamada smiled.

"Cognac then!" Ito exclaimed brightly and signaled to his servant, who wordlessly returned with the bottle and crystal glasses on a tray. The two men tasted the drinks silently, the better to appreciate its fragrance mingling with the fresh scent of a quiet fall gloaming.

"It's very good," Yamada said appreciatively. Ito nodded, smiling. Having an excellent taste in all things—wine, food, art, furniture—was the chief source of his pride. He, like all such people, believed that was the essence of sensibility and understanding. This was also the ostensible reason Ito had invited Yamada to his home, for the first time in the several years that they'd been working together: they were going to discuss art and admire a few priceless items Ito had purchased in recent months. Since Ito's father died, leaving him vast estates that he'd acquired in Korea, Ito had begun to collect antiques in earnest. Now, he was bringing out a Koryo celadon from around the eleventh century, with the sly glance of someone who is

asking a question while knowing the correct answer. The porcelain urn had a silhouette that was as instinctively graceful as the shoulders of a beautiful woman, and its color was an exquisite milky green—a shade that's not truly found in nature, and yet immediately evocative of it.

"It's marvelous," Yamada said honestly. "It's truly one of the best examples of its kind. But what happened here?" He pointed at the long line reaching from the bottom all the way to the shoulder of the urn.

"Ah, that crack. It's impossible to get an antique of this vintage without one. That's from the gravedigger's shovel—but who can blame them? It's not as though they can use feather dusters to bore through the ground, just to avoid hitting the porcelain. It's been repaired beautifully." He smirked, full of understanding. "I actually find it rather exciting. Much more thrilling than collecting something that has been kept in a study of some old gentry. Imagine this being buried with the king of Koryo; and now I get to retrieve it, a thousand years later."

"Yes, that is exciting," Yamada said, affecting approval. Only the flicker of his eyes and the deliberately careful way he set down his glass betrayed him.

"And you'll love this," Ito said, leading the way to the next room. On the floor there was a giant yellow-and-black tiger that, at a glance, looked like a live animal. Upon closer inspection it turned out to be only a skin.

"Do you know how much I paid for this?" Ito said with an unusual frankness, and revealed a sum that exceeded their yearly salaries as colonels. "They're getting absurdly expensive nowadays. But that's precisely why I bought one. Once the beasts are truly well and gone, I could sell this for twenty times what I paid."

"I went tiger hunting once," Yamada said with a distant look in his eyes. "They are the strongest and the most clever beasts you'll ever see."

"You don't say! They're becoming so rare these days in the wild. I haven't heard one has been caught in the last three, four years.

Within the next few years, we'll only catch sight of them at the ChangGyeong Palace Zoo."

At that moment, Ito turned his head to the door, where his sister was standing and casting shy glances.

"Come in, Mineko," Ito said warmly, and the young woman quietly entered. Yamada rose, and the two of them exchanged bows. Unlike her handsome brother, she was plain and even unattractive. But her eyes were pretty and kind, whereas her brother's fine eyes were cold and selfish. Like the two men and other members of the highest Japanese nobility, she was dressed in Western clothes—a loosely fitting dress of pale pink satin that made her look even whiter. She stood next to Yamada, smiling self-consciously.

"So you were saying?" Ito turned back to Yamada, who was registering then that the meeting was devised for him to meet this young woman. "Did you kill it?"

"No, I aimed and shot at it, along with everyone else. It was injured in the leg, but it fled," Yamada said, noticing for the first time that he hoped the tiger had survived.

"Ah, pity. Don't feel bad. It probably died in the woods anyway, and that's the same thing as killing it. Which is more worthy than just buying a skin with money," Ito assured him. Mineko nodded in agreement, and then politely left the room.

**A SERVANT CAME** to put away the antiques one by one, and the men poured and drank more cognac.

"I was by far my father's favorite child," Ito said, taking a sip of his drink. "I always pitied Mineko that she didn't get any of his affections. I felt very protective of her."

"She seems nice."

"Really? Glad to hear she made a good impression on you." Ito smiled. "What else?"

Yamada shrugged. "I don't know her very well, I only just met her."

"Genzo, you know I don't care that much for women," Ito said, switching to a very candid, heart-to-heart tone. "I like the beautiful ones, yes. I appreciate their looks, even their individual qualities.

They're like antiques, you know? But unlike antiques, their value goes down with time, at least from my point of view. It happens without fail. And yet, you see how I'm submitting to the ways of the world." Ito leaned back in his chair and took another swig from his glass. "I'm getting married to the daughter of Count H. I've met her only twice."

"Shall I congratulate you?" Yamada asked ironically, and Ito laughed.

"Yes, I suppose. It's a great alliance. Father would have been very pleased. But this is about you, Genzo. What do you think of my sister? You have to marry at some point. Your father probably told you as much. And Mineko, she's educated and pleasant, not to mention wealthy. She's going to be a good, obedient wife, and I'd like to see her marry someone like you."

Yamada made no reply, choosing to observe the inside of his cup instead. Indeed, Ito Mineko was at least as good as the other matches his father had brought up, if not better. In recent years, Colonel Yamada had discovered that how he *should* feel often differed from how he *did* feel. He worried that this was holding him back and making him weak. As a test of his strength of will, he thus made it a habit to do what didn't appeal to him in the least. He applied himself in the jail cells, personally administering lashes to the most insidious rebels, with the conviction of an athlete who exercises vigorously, believing it will eventually become easier while leaving his body stronger. Therefore, despite not being at all interested in Mineko as a woman or even a person, Yamada answered without emotion, "Fine, I will marry her."

"Excellent! A toast then. To our families," Ito said and they clinked their glasses. Yamada wasn't smiling, however.

"Genzo, don't look so tense. You know what marriage is like?" Ito lowered his glass and smacked his lips. "Marriage is a house. You build it so you can raise your children. But a man isn't locked up inside it. He can come and go as he pleases. It's as impossible for a man to be confined in his marriage as it is for him to never leave his house." He leaned back in his chair, basking in its softness and the hazy glow of the liquor.

# 13

## Left and Right

1925

**JUNGHO STARTED VISITING JADE AT HOME NEARLY EVERY DAY, EVEN IF** for just ten minutes. He didn't want her to get tired of him, and tried a few times to stay away for a while. When he returned, however, Jade always asked where he'd been as keenly as when they were little playmates. With relief, JungHo would then feel permitted to visit regularly once more.

Occasionally they stayed home and chatted over a cup of chrysanthemum tea in the sitting room. Other times, they went out for a walk, going north along ChangGyeong Palace Zoo and continuing almost to the Great East Gate before looping around. It was on one of these walks that Jade revealed something terrifying. She was wearing a new outfit of matching jacket and skirt edged in gold thread and gray rabbit fur. When JungHo remarked on it, she said nonchalantly, "Oh, it was a gift."

JungHo knew he was being awful but he couldn't stop asking, "From Aunt Dani?"

"Ah, no." Jade laughed it off. "From this man. He's some son of a millionaire in Gyeongju." She touched his arm gently and added, "He's quite boring and he snores."



JungHo didn't know what to say to that. The rest of the walk passed by in near silence. For the first time ever, he left her without wanting to prolong their meeting. How could he have been so foolish as to believe that he was anything other than a friend, an old playmate from back in the day?

He realized that this was why she felt so free with him—because she never thought of him as a man. Even her habit of grazing his arm to make a point was just a show of affection; she wasn't putting on an act of seduction like she did with other men. In order to be seen as one of them, it was necessary for him to become rich—not so as to buy her, but to earn her respect. This idea came as a revelation: up until this point JungHo had only ever focused on survival and minimal comfort. He now understood why people who have enough to eat were so obsessed with money. It wasn't so much what they could buy with it, but the validation that they craved.

Once he made up his mind, JungHo took Loach out for a walk. Out of habit, they made their way to the bridge over the canal. The sun was steeping the western clouds in pink, and lights were starting to illuminate the windows of the bluish buildings. Cars passed behind them over the bridge. In front of them, a flock of sparrows leaped off an electric line and went home to the evening sky, talking about their day.

"How can we get rich, Loach?" JungHo asked point-blank. Even as the words left his mouth he realized he sounded desperate and ignorant, but he swallowed his pride.

"You want to become rich?" Loach smiled his sly smile.

"Well, who says we have to go on like this for the rest of our lives?" JungHo balled up his hands and pounded them against the old stone railing. "Ripping off businesses for free food and some cash, is that all there is? It can't go on like this."

"Do you know, there is a way," Loach said with sudden seriousness. "You know all Seoul is divided into the Leftists and the Rightists."

JungHo had heard the angry chatter on the streets but had no idea what it meant or how it would affect him. The headlines on

newspapers all over town meant nothing to him, since he could not read.

"The Communists, that's on the left. And the Nationalists, that's on the right. It's not really important who believes what . . . But both groups will need men for protection and other jobs that they can't be directly involved with. Do you know what I'm saying?"

"Yes," JungHo said, although he was only dimly aware of the whole situation.

"So what we need to do is simply find out which party is willing to pay us more, swear allegiance, and help them do their jobs."

"Who can we talk to? I don't know any of these people," JungHo said sheepishly.

"Don't you worry about that." Loach smiled. "It so happens that I have already been in touch with a bigwig among the Communists. He was one of the founding members of the Koryo Communist Party that got started in Shanghai. This guy is incredibly wealthy and connected as well, so if we work for him, we're all going to strike a gold mine, you hear me? I'll bring you to meet him—his name is Lee MyungBo."

\* \* \*

**MYUNGBO'S HOUSE IN PYEONGCHANG-DONG WAS** a traditional villa wrapped in old stone walls, over which the top parts of a pair of trees could be seen from the outside. Their branches were touchingly slender and leafless, yet heavy with persimmons that shone like rubies by the moonlight. The outer gates topped with ceramic tiles rose twelve feet high, tall and wide enough that the master of the house could stay in his carriage as he entered his home—a privilege of only the highest gentry. This was just one of the family's ancestral homes that MyungBo had inherited upon his father's death in 1925. When the loveless parent choked on a fish bone at breakfast, MyungBo had suddenly gone from having to importune his friends to being the master of vast estates with an annual income of three hundred thousand won.

As JungHo stepped through those imposing outer gates, he became acutely aware that he was so out of his element he might as well be at the Imperial Palace itself. He was astonished by the details that MyungBo would consider most unassuming and modest, like the pleasantly musty odor of the ancient books lining the bookshelves, the sideboards inlaid with mother-of-pearl, and the unadorned yet clearly priceless antique porcelains. Above the urns, there was a framed photograph of a bald foreigner with a mustache and a pointed goatee. Everywhere, there was tasteful restraint and gentlemanly elegance that made JungHo feel ashamed to be treading the spotless floor with his worn socks.

"Don't be nervous," Loach whispered as they waited for MyungBo in the library.

"I'm fine," JungHo said, reflexively clenching his fists. "Why would I be nervous? He may be rich, but he's just a human being who eats and shits, same as you or me." As always, his words came out far rougher than his thoughts. He couldn't speak gently, just as he didn't know how to punch softly.

There was a rustling sound outside the door, followed by a clearing of the throat. "May I come in?" MyungBo asked, just before he slid the door open and entered the library, smiling calmly.

"I am so sorry to have kept you waiting. I was in my chamber meeting some of our comrades. And I've brought tea and some fruit, since my wife is not feeling well," he said, setting a tray on a little table. "We do still have maids and a housekeeper, though I try to let them rest when it's late like this." Once he set down the tray with its teacups and a plate of persimmons, he gave a bow to JungHo. "My name is Lee MyungBo, but please, call me Comrade Lee," he said. JungHo was caught off guard, for no gentleman had ever looked at him straight in the eyes, let alone offered such a courteous greeting, as if he were an equal. As JungHo awkwardly returned the bow, MyungBo greeted Loach with a warm handshake and said, "It's great to see you again, Mr. Loach."

Before the meeting, Loach had explained to JungHo how he made MyungBo's acquaintance. One day Loach and some of the others were making the rounds of their establishments, and went

inside a little noodle shop where MyungBo happened to be having lunch. When Loach was demanding the protection fee from the shopkeeper, MyungBo came up to them and said he would pay whatever Loach was asking, and also buy the group's lunch if they would sit with him.

By this point, Loach and the rest of JungHo's followers were used to beating up anyone who resisted their "tax collection" or tried to admonish them. But something about MyungBo's calm smile and modest yet dignified bearing kept even the rudest of them from lashing out. They sat down to eat, and MyungBo asked them whether their parents were living and where their hometowns were. He coaxed stories out of the most brutish of them. By the time they were finished with their noodle soup, MyungBo was telling them about a society that would take care of its orphans and the poor, and never let anyone starve.

"It's hunger that is evil, never the person," MyungBo had said, looking around at them with such pure and good-hearted eyes that they all fell into an unaccustomed silence. Afterward, Loach had come to a few meetings at MyungBo's house, where a dozen or so men and even some women sat together and talked about this thing called communism.

On this night, MyungBo again started by asking about JungHo's hometown and whether his parents were still living. JungHo itched to resist answering this gentleman's questions, but found that he couldn't—MyungBo was simply too genuine and kind to rebuff so rudely.

"How old are you, Mr. JungHo?" MyungBo asked.

"I'm nineteen," JungHo replied, blushing under his tan. He was aware how young and green he appeared to MyungBo, who wouldn't have asked that question otherwise.

"I remember that age well. It feels like yesterday . . ." MyungBo closed his eyes and sighed. There was a tinge of sadness in his smile, JungHo thought. "Young men must have dreams, Mr. JungHo. What is it that you want in life?"

"I want . . ." JungHo faltered. What he immediately thought of was Jade, how she looked that day on the hill while recounting the

story of the pebble. But he wasn't going to share his secret weakness with this stranger, especially not in front of Loach. Instead he said, "I want to become rich."

The moment the words were spoken, JungHo realized he'd said the wrong thing. MyungBo's sweet and trusting face turned melancholy, and to hide it he raised his cup of chrysanthemum tea to his lips. The thin and scarred hand was shaking as if it belonged to a much older man. After a few moments of silence, MyungBo resumed.

"Mr. JungHo, what did your father do?"

"He was a soldier in the Imperial Army, before it was disbanded. After that, he was a tenant farmer . . . And when we could no longer pay the rent on the farm, he went hunting." JungHo hadn't thought of his father for a very long time. He reached into the inside pocket of his jacket and discreetly felt for the pouch with the cigarette case and the ring, as was his habit when he wished to feel comforted.

"Your father had the most noble profession in the world. Whether it's farming or hunting, he lived off the land through honest, hard work." MyungBo already looked less melancholy. "And that's the same with these restaurant owners and shopkeepers too. What would your father say if he knew you were threatening and stealing money from these simple people, who are themselves only trying to scrape by? Forgive me if I sound presumptuous, but I too am old enough to be your father."

JungHo glared at his host, sudden viciousness rising in his eyes. "My father was so honest he starved to death. By the time he died he hadn't eaten anything in three days, except some warm water with soy sauce. That was our family's 'soup,' Mr. Rich Man. How dare you lecture me about honesty and simplicity? You have no right." Though JungHo knew he wouldn't actually attack this well-spoken, kindly gentleman, he instinctively balled up his fists. Loach reached over and touched his sleeve, as if to calm him.

"I am sorry, Mr. JungHo," MyungBo conceded gently, surprising the younger man. "It's true, I have no right. You have done what you needed to do to survive. But if you were given the chance to live honestly and still thrive, wouldn't you prefer that?"

"I asked you about your wish in life. I will tell you mine," he continued. "My first dream is our country's independence. My second dream is that all our people will have enough to eat and prosper and live as human beings ought to. A fair and just society where no one is forsaken. And one dream is not possible without the other . . ."

MyungBo again closed his eyes; this was the revelation that had transformed and occupied him since being released from prison in the summer of 1921. He had taken the earliest ship out to Shanghai, the stronghold of expat activists from across political factions.

Though they had all risked their lives for the same cause, MyungBo quickly found that he distrusted many of his fellow activists. Before his time in prison, he'd reserved his scorn for those who were greedy for money or for prestige. (SungSoo had belonged to this camp, though in memory of their early friendship MyungBo didn't think this, except in the most hidden corner of his mind.) In Shanghai, he was amazed to discover that for some people, an even stronger motivation was power. He also noticed that these activists spoke of Warren G. Harding as if he were some rich and beloved relation who might someday bequeath an outrageous inheritance—with unbecoming deference and eager expectation. A group of them went to Washington, D.C., to plead directly to the president, and asked MyungBo to come along; but he could never forget how the American consulate had promised help and delivered nothing. Instead, he joined a group of socialists and took the Trans-Siberian train to Moscow in order to beseech Russia.

Though he had spent the previous fifteen years traversing through foreign lands, MyungBo was not a born traveler. But like all those who have poetry in their hearts, he was mesmerized by the wild stretches of the Mongolian steppes, dotted with shaggy ponies grazing upon the frosted grass. The nameless purple and yellow flowers swayed in the windswept moors, raising their plain little faces up to the open sky, and nothing could have been more glorious. As the train snaked around the shores of Lake Baikal, its unfathomably ancient and azure waters lapping against the cliffs, and the mountains rose with the pink sunrise and bowed into darkness at evenfall, MyungBo pulled his eyes away from the

window and even dozed with his head bobbing against the glass. Noticing his excitement, one of the socialists said to him, "Russia is truly a great country. It has more beauty than China, which is very grand, and more grandeur than Korea, which is very beautiful. If this landscape is any indication of their spirit, they'll surely help us."

Russia was, most of all, a vast country, and the train kept moving for ten days and ten nights. MyungBo, still very frail, hid from the others how often he couldn't hold down food or felt faint with exhaustion. But in Moscow they were amply rewarded by a private meeting with Lenin, who warmly welcomed them and pledged a generous funding of six hundred thousand rubles.

At exactly the same time, the delegates to Washington met with a completely different sort of reception. Harding was then busy dividing Asia and the Pacific with the Japanese: the United States would colonize the Philippines, and in return let Japan take Mongolia from China and Siberia from Russia. Washington was not going to anger its new ally by encouraging some rebels demanding independence. The Korean delegates trudged back to Shanghai without even a courtesy meeting with a low-ranking official.

This was how MyungBo became convinced that Russia was the one solution to the two evils in his world. Korea would become independent with Russia's help, and create a fair and prosperous society for all based on communism. That would eradicate both the Japanese colonial government and the avaricious landowning class, which were the two main causes of the suffering of the people. And as for America, some of its people were good and honorable. But for all the talk of world peace and justice, America was a greedy colonial power no better than Japan.

MyungBo couldn't explain all of this to JungHo, uneducated as he was. But it was clear that he was intelligent in his own way, having survived the unthinkable while leading his underlings, who were as loyal to him as a pack of wolves. MyungBo had always trusted first impressions, and he saw something very rare in JungHo's plain, unremarkable face. It was the exact quality that MyungBo sought the most from people—honesty.

MyungBo had long been fascinated by how nearly everyone considered themselves honest. People were wonderfully clever and subtle when they needed to rationalize their actions, and so quick-witted that they didn't even realize they were fooling themselves. But JungHo somehow was different. The young man was obviously capable of hurting people without even pausing for breath. There was very little in the way of checks and balances in him. But he would never *betray* people—and that was the main reason he seemed so unlike almost everyone else. This straightforwardness, combined with his raw and compulsive energy, was the reason followers flocked to JungHo and trusted him with their lives.

MyungBo sat up straighter, drawing a deep breath. "Have you heard of Russia, Mr. JungHo? Though it feels far away, our country shares a border with it in the North."

"I'm from the North—of course I know that," JungHo said. "I've met some Yankees and the Chinese, but never anyone from Russia. Do they look like us, or like the Yankees?"

"It depends. When I went to Russia, I saw many people who looked Eastern and had golden skin and black hair—not so different from us—and others who looked like Europeans, with big blue eyes and light hair."

"That bearded fellow up there." JungHo pointed at the framed photograph on the wall. "He looks sort of queer, almost half Eastern and half European. Is he Russian?"

"Ah, yes." MyungBo smiled sadly. "He is Russian, and I've had the honor to meet him in Moscow before he passed away. His name was Vladimir Lenin. I will have to tell you more about him next time you visit. Soon, I hope."

"Master Lee, I can see that you're a good person—I really do," JungHo said, shaking his head. "But I am not trying to save the country, or anyone else, really. What does that have to do with me? It's the gentry like you who have brought us to this point, so you can figure out how to get us out of this mess. I only care about how my brothers and I can make some money."

MyungBo sighed, resting his eyes on the sideboard and collecting his thoughts. "People think they want money, but generally I find



that they actually want something else," he said slowly, thinking of SungSoo and other wealthy men in their circles. "They say that being rich is their goal, because that feels safer to admit than what they actually wish for . . . Do you understand what I mean?"

In amazement, JungHo stared at his host's weathered yet appealing face. The younger man blushed again, this time at having his deepest secret being laid bare.

"I can also see that you're a good person, Mr. JungHo," MyungBo continued. "If you and your friends would work for me and my cause, I can't guarantee that you will become rich, but you will likely get whatever you actually need to be happy. And that's not anything money can buy."

At MyungBo's last word, Jade's image again flashed before JungHo's eyes. He was surprised how everything MyungBo was saying made so much sense. Not communism, Russia, Japan, or Korea, ideas and maps that had no bearing on him, but attaining true happiness. In the heart of his heart, JungHo only wished to share his life with someone who loved him. Without having explained himself, he felt that MyungBo would appreciate and even respect this wish. He had never felt so understood by anyone, let alone a stranger he had just met for the first time. If someone as genuine, intelligent, and powerful as MyungBo couldn't lead him to what he wanted, no one else could.

"So what is it that you have to do to become a Communist?" JungHo asked.

# 14

## Some Men Are Good and Some Men Are Bad

1925

**AFTER THE CURTAIN FELL, JADE RETURNED TO HER DRESSING ROOM** and sank down on the tufted settee, surrounded by flowers. She sat very still and heavy for a few minutes, languishing in the fatigue that overtook her at the end of every performance. Gathering a bit of energy, she pulled on the ribbon of her snug traditional blouse and shrugged it off her shoulders. Unlacing the *chima* pressing down on her chest allowed her to inhale deeply, and feeling more relaxed, she plucked a rose from the nearest bouquet and breathed in its fragrance.

It was the opening week of *The Story of ChunHyang*. Jade played the heroine, a seventeenth-century courtesan who falls in love with a local magistrate's son. After much suffering, they end up getting married despite the difference of their class. Seemingly all Seoul was talking about the play, and the newspapers lavished praises on her performance. The first time she saw her photograph next to a review, she nearly screamed out loud in joy; she'd never dreamed of such success—perhaps for Lotus, but never for herself. Every night,

her dressing room was filled with fresh flowers that held hidden messages from her admirers. Jade noticed that there was a little folded note tucked in the bouquet of red roses. Still holding the single flower to her nose with her left hand, she pulled out the note with her right and began rapidly reading it.

"To the greatest actress in Seoul, next to whom these roses would blush even more crimson . . . For you are more beautiful than any flower . . . Oh, it's from Mr. Yoo. How dreadful and funny!" Jade giggled to herself, recalling the steel factory owner with his windowpane suits and round eyeglasses. His hair was always pomaded and slicked back, still showing the ridges of the comb, and both his breath and teeth bore the unpleasant tang of tobacco. He had been sending her gifts for months, like painted French porcelain dolls, a box of chocolate truffles, and a very pretty bejeweled gold comb. Because he was so rich, Jade had assumed that the gemstones on the comb were real. But Dani, who only kept and wore the finest jewels, needed only a glance to know that they were paste. "This is just colored glass," she had said crisply, not noticing Jade's embarrassment and strangely hurt feelings. Afterward, Jade returned each of Mr. Yoo's gifts and never answered any of his letters.

"Married and thirty years older than I am, of course!" she muttered to herself, mindlessly folding the note and tossing it aside. Next to the roses there was another, much smaller bouquet of purple and white cosmoses.

"No note. I wonder—" Jade thought, smiling happily into the blossoms. None of her older admirers of Mr. Yoo's ilk would have sent something without a name. She felt she could guess who it had to be, this shy young man who adored her from afar. As she fell into a daydream, the door creaked open and a man entered. He was wearing a khaki officer's uniform.

"You look quite nice tonight," Colonel Ito said, smiling as though Jade should feel grateful for such a compliment. "No, why are you putting on your clothes? I like you better without them." He laughed as Jade wound her skirt back over her chest with a haughty glare.

"You're welcome to come see my performance in the theater, but I beg you not to visit me anywhere else, especially not in my dressing room. I've already told you many times," Jade replied in Japanese, putting her arms through the sleeves of her blouse and tying the ribbons.

"On the contrary, I don't plan on ever seeing the play. It would bore me, and I can see you so much better here," he said, loosening the top button of his uniform with his right hand. He crossed the small dressing room in just two strides and sat down on the settee, spreading his thighs comfortably open. Jade rose at the same moment, but Ito caught her arm and forcibly pulled her around so that she was standing in front of him.

"And I can touch you here," he said under his breath, taking off her blouse and pulling down on her skirt, revealing her ivory-colored breasts. The floral and pungent smell of female skin filled his nose, and he longed to bury himself in it. He spread a tan palm on each breast and squeezed, moving his hands in a circular stroke and feeling himself get hard. Just as his lips fell hungrily on her bare skin, Jade tore herself away with animal strength.

An indulgent smile flashed again on Ito's selfish face. "I do love the fight that you Joseon girls have . . . It is much more fun." He wrapped his left arm around her waist and locked her in. His right hand reached underneath her skirt, traveled up between her thighs, and pressed urgently on the warm and dewy triangular mound, covered only by the muslin underwear.

"Don't touch me!" Jade screamed and swung her arm, slapping him in the face with a loud smack. He hardly seemed to notice, only tightening his grip on her. She beat his back frantically with her hands, and finally bit him on the muscled top of his right shoulder.

"You bitch!" he shouted as he let go of her. She spun away to the opposite end of the dressing room, clasping her hands over her undone skirt. She looked frightened at what she'd done.

"I could have you arrested for this," Ito began, leaning back on the settee and breathing roughly. "But I won't, as long as you spend a night with me. You might even enjoy yourself."

"Never," Jade said softly, her arms still crossed over her body. "I'm not afraid of you," she added, although her voice was shaking.

"Fine. What is it that you want? You want flowers like these?" Ito gestured sarcastically at the bouquets. "Or is it money or jewels? No one has yet accused Ito Atsuo of miserliness. I am willing to pay a fair price."

"There's no amount of money you could pay to sleep with me," Jade said, which was half true. She had paid off the cost of her training and board to Dani and the discharge fee to the guild, and she didn't have the time or the need to entertain at parties. She made plenty of money from acting, yet she also accepted gifts from men who may or may not eventually become intimate with her. But like other celebrated actresses and courtesans, she was never for sale to just anyone with money.

Ito, frustrated with her obstinacy and still in that desperate state of arousal, unbuckled his trousers. "Just watch me, then." He started stroking himself, the other hand gripping the armrest. Jade stared, and then turned her eyes away when he grabbed her silk blouse, balled it up like a rag, and climaxed into it.

Ito slouched back on the seat for a few minutes, eyes rolling up to the ceiling one moment and fluttering closed in the next, breathing hard as if he'd just sprinted. As he collected himself and buckled his trousers back on, there was a sound of footsteps outside the door.

"What's taking you so long? Can I come in?" Lotus said as she entered, wearing her street clothes. Finding Ito and Jade in their state of disarray, she blushed and averted her eyes. Unconcerned by the women, Ito calmly got up, brushed off the length of his sleeves, and walked out without a word.

"What was that all about? Are you okay?" Lotus asked, putting her arm around Jade.

"I'm okay. I just need to go home," Jade answered, shivering. She pulled on her street clothes and they went out together through the side exit, where HanChol was waiting for them with his rickshaw. Since the night of their benefit performance, he had become their favorite driver; Jade made sure to let him know where she needed

to go next, addressed him politely as though he were her equal, and always paid at least time and a half, if not more. But now she wished to be left alone, even by him. She could feel Ito's handprints turning to bruises on her skin like crushed grapes.

"Is she okay? Is Miss Jade ill?" HanChol asked, and she turned her head away and said nothing.

"She just had a bit of a scare, that's all," Lotus said. "Can you get us home quickly?"

HanChol nodded, helping the young women up into the carriage. When he was in front of them, he stole a glance back and saw that Jade was crying. He trotted quickly to their villa, although it was late at night and he'd had a long day. When they arrived home, the women got out without their usual banter and disappeared into the gates.

It was so different from how HanChol had imagined the night would go, and he was exhausted by disappointment. He had thought that she would ask him if he'd sent her the cosmos flowers, for which he'd saved up pennies here and there for a week. He'd planned to finally tell her how he felt about her. Instead, he was sickened by worry over her, and at the same time, strangely exhilarated by his own concern, because it made him feel more deeply like a human. At all other times, he was only thinking about what to do next in order to survive and climb his way out, numb to any emotions. Worrying about Jade was the only time he felt such sweetness along with the pain.

**JADE AND LOTUS CROSSED** the garden and went inside their pavilion. Instead of going to her own room, Lotus followed Jade and started preparing her bedspread for her.

"Here, lie down under the covers," Lotus said, patting the pillow. "Do you want me to sleep here tonight?"

Jade crawled into the cot and nodded. Lotus went to the linen chest and retrieved another cot. She put it next to Jade's, undressed, pulled out the pins from her updo, and combed her long, lustrous black hair, all with the same reassuring, robust energy she always radiated. Next she undid Jade's pins and brushed her hair for

her, feeling as tender and protective as when they were little girls dressing each other's hair every night.

Once finished, Lotus slipped into her bedspread, murmuring, "Should we take off our makeup? I'm so tired . . ."

"Me too," Jade said, her eyes closed. She was already sedated from the influence of her best friend.

"What did that Japanese bastard do? He didn't force himself on you, did he?"

"He tried . . . and I bit him," Jade said, and Lotus broke out in laughter.

"That technique wasn't in Aunt Dani's courtesan playbook. But maybe it should've been," she said.

Then Jade too smiled in the darkness, as though it were a funny story, after all. Watching her, Lotus felt proud of her ability to turn even the most awful events into things to laugh about. People thought she was naturally facetious, maybe a bit vulgar—but truly, she did this for her friends. Who made them laugh when there was rape, murder, and misery in every corner of this dark world? Only she did.

"He was quite good-looking, why didn't you just let it happen?" Lotus continued. "You don't have to be such a paragon of virtues, like some highborn lady. At the end of the day, when the lights are out, all men are the same. Japanese, Korean—they're all vile." Though she'd never say so out loud, she didn't think she would have refused Ito, herself.

"I hate him," Jade said passionately. "He thinks he can have any woman, and do anything to women—and they accept it as a matter of course because he's powerful and rich and not hard on the eyes. Well, I'm not one of them." Fully roused, she turned her head to face Lotus. The bright whites of her eyes looked bluish in the darkness.

"Lotus, how can you forget what they did to your sister? What about Hesoon? I will never let a Japanese bastard touch me while I have the strength to fight." Lotus wondered when exactly her friend became so opinionated—when they were children Jade had always wanted to follow her lead. Only while growing up did she become so stubborn about her likes and dislikes.

"That's fine, but Aunt Dani had the Judge, remember? Why do you think she was okay with that? Sometimes the world isn't so black and white," Lotus answered. "Anyway, we should get some sleep."

**BEFORE THE FIRST BLUE LIGHT** of dawn entered the room, Lotus crawled out of the cot and went back to her chamber. The first thing she did was wash the previous night's makeup off with foamy mung bean water. To others, it appeared that Lotus hated going anywhere without her face painted, but in reality, the sensation of cakey powder and rouge melting off and revealing her fresh skin always gave her a great satisfaction. Whenever she sat crossed-legged in front of her vanity and massaged peach-blossom water onto her clean face, she felt calm and honest with herself more than at any other time of the day.

Carefully, Lotus studied her smooth, poreless skin that gleamed on the bridge of the nose and tops of her cheeks. When she looked at herself this way, she believed she was beautiful, which gave her the confidence to voice thoughts that she otherwise concealed.

The anger she felt, for example—she thought now, as she combed camellia oil through her black hair. In *The Story of ChunHyang*, Lotus played HyangDan, the heroine's maid. It was a comic, bawdy role and nothing more—it didn't even have any singing. When she'd signed the contract with the theater, the director had promised her that she would get a starring role. Then the casting was announced, and Lotus marched up to the director's office to demand an explanation. He only looked up at her and said defensively, "Of course I know you're the better singer. But the camera loves Jade!" What truly enraged her was the fact that Jade, who was a mediocre singer at best, got to sing onstage, night after night. Why should Jade get the part and be featured in *The Ladies' Journal*? And why should men look at her that way, like a thirsty person looks at a waterfall? Even their rickshaw driver HanChol was smitten with Jade. Watching those two flirt discreetly, as if to protect Lotus's feelings, gave her a burning acid reflux.



As much as Lotus loved her friend, she was still infuriated every night. It was different with Luna: after giving birth to Hesook, Luna had assumed the role of a mother so fully that she seemed physically embarrassed by any attention. Unlike the two younger women, Luna was just a courtesan bound to her guild. She was called to parties often but held everyone at an arm's length, even other courtesans. Whenever a man became infatuated with her, Luna would serenely and coolly make herself unavailable through various excuses until he lost interest. Although Luna had shot a few advertisements for a beauty cream and a hair soap, and her face was shown everywhere in newspapers and magazines, she was essentially alone—and Lotus didn't begrudge her own sister's solitude.

She was finished with her toilette. Her face was concealed again beneath a fresh coat of crushed seashells, rice powder, and lead. Her hair was done up in a chignon, but parted on the side and held together with pins instead of a *binyuh*. This coiffure went better with her Western-style silk blouse, cut looser and much longer over the waist, and the matching red wool skirt. When Lotus came out of her room, her maid was crossing the courtyard to the kitchen in order to prepare everyone's breakfast and washing water.

"Tell Jade that I'll be out all morning. I'll meet her at the theater by five," she said, walking out of the gates. There was no rickshaw waiting for her outside—she hadn't asked HanChol to drive her this morning, because she didn't want Jade to know. She walked two blocks to the boulevard and lucked out in hailing a rickshaw, although there were not many drivers left nowadays.

"The Grand Oriental Cinema, please." Lotus leaned forward to tell the driver, then sank back into the partitioned seat, hiding away from the biting wind. It was a chilly November morning, just teetering at that point where the clear blue and yellow of autumn give way to the gray, silver, and pink of winter. People were bustling about, dragging carts and hawking persimmons, fire-roasted sweet potatoes, charcoal, fish, herbs, and mushrooms. Meanwhile, cars kept overtaking the rickshaw, although the driver was trotting at an admirable speed. There was a smoky, fresh, and sweet smell in the

air. While Lotus was noticing these things with childish wonder, the rickshaw arrived in front of the two-story movie palace.

She paid the driver and walked into the lobby, which was deserted at this time of day. As soon as she entered, a woman secretary appeared and greeted her. "You're Miss Lotus, right? President Ma is waiting for you," the secretary said sweetly, but without a bow. "Right this way, please." She led the way through a dark corridor and opened the door to an office, where President Ma was looking through some papers at his desk.

"Ah, Miss Lotus, it's an honor to receive you here," he said, rising and bowing to her courteously. He had a largish head, flashing eyes anchored by a well-pronounced nose, and an open forehead. The husky vigor of early old age emanated from his face and body, which was still upright and manly. Lotus felt nervous for no reason.

"No, you honor me by your invitation," she murmured as the president came around from his desk and led her to the club chairs in the center of the room, lightly touching her back to do so. He ordered the secretary to bring them coffee, and Lotus noted with pleasure the resentment in the young woman's face.

"So, Miss Lotus, you must know why I asked you to come here," the president began. "You're one of our finest actresses and singers. I heard you sing for the first time at MyungWol, two years ago. Do you remember when I came for a banquet one night?"

Lotus shook her head.

"You sang a waltz, and your voice had so much depth in it that I couldn't believe you were only fifteen." He smiled. "Since then, I'd always dreamed that one day you might perform at the Grand Oriental Cinema. The other day, I heard that you were under contract with Joseon Theatre for a role that's far beneath you. So I decided to reach out and see if you'd like to be a star at the Grand Oriental."

Lotus blushed, forgetting her wish to seem haughty like Dani. The Grand Oriental was by far the largest theater in Seoul—a two-thousand-seat movie palace showing motion pictures, variety shows, dance performances, and plays. It was even more prestigious than Joseon Theatre, and she was being offered a star billing.

"Talent like yours, one sees only once or twice in a generation. I'd like to make sure you get the attention you deserve. We'll start with a new show, with you in a singing role. Maybe *The Story of ShimChung*. The public can't get enough of the adaptations of medieval novels—they rouse their sympathies and let them cry out their feelings. Of course, they also have the advantage of passing Japanese censorship without difficulty." President Ma paused, putting his two hands together so that they only touched at the fingertips. "At the same time, you'd be making a new record. Original jazz and waltz songs, written by a composer I know who studied in Tokyo. How does that sound?"

"I'm amazed that you think so highly of me." Lotus flushed.

"Well, Miss Lotus. You have an exceptional voice." President Ma smiled. "I have heard you're the niece of the celebrated courtesan Kim Dani. All Seoul used to be under her sway, fifteen or so years ago. I remember her well . . . She's a breathtaking woman with a brilliant mind and courage like a man's. But your fame will surpass hers, I am sure of it."

# 15

## Nocturnal Birds

1928

**THE SPRING WHEN LOTUS AND JADE TURNED TWENTY, THEIR HOUSE** was always filled with a timorous and delicate air. The junior maid was busy delivering secret letters to one mistress and then the other. They were prone to looking dreamily into space, or suddenly smiling for no reason.

They were no longer girls by any standard. Most peasant women had one or two children by their age, and the most coveted courtesans were closer to fifteen rather than twenty. But they were only just beginning to see themselves as women. Each felt as though she'd gained some secret password that would change all the previously known rules of life.

Although she never spoke of him, everyone in the household knew that Lotus's lover was President Ma. She had been starring in *The Story of ShimChung* for only a month when he sent a note to her dressing room during intermission, offering to take her to dinner. When she came out at the end of the night, there was a black car waiting outside the back entrance of the Grand Oriental. He was in the driver's seat, wearing an elegant fedora and a black suit with a pristine white pocket square.

"Let's go drink to your success, wherever you'd like," he'd said as Lotus slid onto the passenger seat. Her nose flooded with his scent—the freshness of cologne mixed with the warmth of tobacco.

"It's fun going out for a drive, isn't it? In the summertime, I'll take the top off and you'll feel the wind in your hair. There's nothing in the world that's more refreshing," he said, and she drank in every word. He was implying that they would continue to spend time together in the future, and thinking of what *she* might like while also sharing what *he* likes. This is what it means to be loved, Lotus thought. There had been no one else who showed so much interest in her, so she fell for him before he even asked her to be his mistress.

Since then, the black car, which he had purchased from a French gold mine owner, was always waiting for her at the end of the night. Most of the time, they made love hastily in the car before he drove back home to his wife and three children. When this first happened, Lotus was mortified; they were parked on a side street, there was the balmy light of a spring dusk, and anyone could have looked inside. But she eventually realized that this impropriety gave him a special thrill, much like how he loved driving fast with the top down. It was the kind of thing he would neither ask nor want from his wife—she knew this instinctively and was proud of being the one woman who could give him what he needed. But whenever Lotus managed to convince him to spend the night in her room, and he slept soundly with his arm reassuringly around her, she forgot any bitterness or resentment she'd ever felt and was sorry for others who could not experience such happiness.

**IT WAS TEN O'CLOCK AT NIGHT** and JungHo was standing outside his mentor's door, half listening to the voices inside and half drifting away to sleep.

"... Send support to the tenant farmers who are rising up against the Oriental Colonization Company ..."

"... But are we giving up on Primorski? We should never have trusted the Red Army ..."

When he'd first moved to MyungBo's guesthouse, these phrases were meaningless to him as though they were in a foreign tongue. He wasn't even interested in knowing these windy words and cloudy ideas; he liked to reserve his thinking for Jade, his friends, food and shelter, and other tangible things that made his heart warm, stomach full, and feet firm and heavy on the ground. Then MyungBo started explaining things to him one by one, using the words that he *could* understand. *Primorski* was just the Russian word for Yeonhaejoo, a frosty northern land that horse-riding Koreans conquered two thousand years ago. They were hunters, mountain people, warriors—and their capital was PyongYang, which was close to JungHo's own village. When JungHo listened to these tales, he felt a strange yearning and pain. It was a pain that originated outside of him and seeped through his skin, like the pale blue moonlight, the howling of wolves, and the sound of snow crunching under his feet.

The door opened; several men dressed in suits came out, along with a few women in *hanbok*. They barely nodded at JungHo while passing by and whispering among themselves. JungHo flushed a little, remembering how deeply MyungBo bowed to him at their first meeting. These revolutionaries all talked about abolishing class, but MyungBo was the only one who treated everyone—including JungHo—with equal respect.

"Comrade JungHo, I'm sorry the meeting ran late," MyungBo called, and JungHo walked inside.

His mentor did not get up; that was the one gesture of informality that he allowed himself as the months passed. Instead, he busied himself with spreading out a book, sheets of paper, and a pencil over a low table. JungHo sat down across from him and peered down at the book. Instantly, he lost all memory of the shapes of characters he'd learned. Instead, his mind let the black marks turn into cranes flying across the page, then strips of charcoal scattered in the snow, and he shook his head firmly to get rid of these unhelpful associations.

"Let's start from the top," MyungBo nudged gently. "You remember this syllable . . ."

JungHo searched in the innermost depths of his being for the answer. His eyes felt watery from the effort, but he came up to the surface with the correct name: "It's *dae*."

"Very well done! Excellent! And then the next one?" MyungBo said, brimming with excitement. JungHo forged on in order to not disappoint his mentor, diving into his mind and bringing back answers one by one.

After an excruciating hour, MyungBo closed the book. "That's enough reading for today I think," he said, then smiled, as if to reassure JungHo. "I know it's very difficult, Comrade JungHo. But my instinct tells me you'll play a large part in our independence, and that's what I'm preparing you for. Now let's try writing."

For the past several months, MyungBo had been asking JungHo to copy all the dozens of consonants and vowels from their workbook. Instead, MyungBo now wrote out just three syllables on the sheet of paper and asked JungHo to read them out loud.

"*Nam . . . Joong . . . Jung . . .*" JungHo looked up at his mentor, who was beaming. "It's my name."

"I haven't been teaching you the right way—that was hampering your progress. Let's first learn the most important word. Everything you write henceforth under your name has to be done in honesty and good faith. That's what it means to have a good name—not who your family is or how rich or famous you are."

JungHo copied from MyungBo's example, writing the first syllable again and again, then the second, then the third, until he filled the page. Then he turned that sheet facedown, took a blank sheet of paper, and shakily wrote out the three syllables of his name together for the first time. When he finished, he looked up eagerly like a schoolboy and saw that MyungBo had tears in his eyes.

"Well done, my friend," MyungBo said, trying to conceal the breaking of his voice. "You have a lot of strength in your penmanship—it's like your personality."

The childish letters were overlarge and uneven, but JungHo knew it was a genuine compliment and not a mockery.

That night, JungHo inwardly promised himself to live his life as to make MyungBo proud; before, he'd only wanted a way to improve

himself in order to win Jade. MyungBo was connected to him through neither blood nor love—it was honor that bound them irrevocably together. Upon this realization he added MyungBo to his list of people to keep safe, no matter what.

Despite being one of the forty richest men in Korea and unfathomably influential, his mentor was living in constant mortal danger. His life was at an even greater risk since he renounced pacifism and compromise. MyungBo told JungHo that peacefully marching for independence had sacrificed too many lives for little gain, and that in order to gain their freedom they had to fight back. (JungHo had no problem understanding this portion of their lessons. He rather felt like saying, “Of course, what did you expect, you rich people?” but bit his tongue out of deference.) Unfortunately, the wings of the Korean armed forces had largely been clipped. The independence army based in Vladivostok had won victory after victory for a decade, sometimes joining forces with the Red Army against Japan. But afterward, the Bolsheviks demanded the Koreans disarm and disband, or be absorbed under the Russian command. Those who refused were killed or imprisoned.

The independence army in Manchuria had fared only a little better, severely weakened after the Japanese army massacred tens of thousands of Koreans living there, civilian or otherwise. That left Shanghai as the only viable center of armed resistance, although raising an army there in the heart of China was impossible. MyungBo therefore believed that the only effective course was to attack singly those places Japan valued the most: their police stations, banks, government offices, armories, and the like, in Korea, Japan, and China. MyungBo was trying to establish a group of exceptional snipers in Shanghai for these high-profile targets.

“We’re at war, Comrade JungHo. And sometimes, despite your best intentions and efforts, war is inevitable,” MyungBo had once said, almost like an apology. JungHo hadn’t needed that explanation, but he nodded and grimaced to show he didn’t take any of this lightly. He believed that his mentor would never lead him astray or ask him to do something shameful or unjust. He would live up to MyungBo’s expectations, when the time came. Until then, he was



called to a hundred different tasks MyungBo couldn't do himself: deliver forbidden manifestos to the socialists in the South, hide fugitives in safe houses and deliver them food, discreetly exchange a suitcase with a stranger at the train station under the plain gaze of the gendarmes. JungHo gave his all to these assignments, and MyungBo rewarded him—not with money or promotions, but with his unspeakable goodness.

The closer he became to MyungBo, the less intense JungHo's yearning for Jade became. The occupation of his mind and body to all that he needed to do in order to be worthy of her left him with very little time or energy to spend with her. He was going to her house once a week for a while, then once every fortnight, then just once a month. The worst part of this was that Jade no longer seemed to mind that he'd stayed away—she seemed preoccupied with rehearsals, performances, salon appointments, photo shoots, interviews, shopping, cinema, and a hundred other obligations and amusements. She always greeted him warmly, looked more and more beautiful each time they met, and talked breathlessly about some artist or a new novel of which he had zero knowledge. It seemed she always had something to do after ten, fifteen minutes. She was sometimes not home when he came by at noon.

So JungHo made a promise to himself that he'd stop calling on her until he was as important to her as she was to him. If he was being honest, he didn't know if he could ever take the place of her work, her art. Just from watching her dance once, he'd seen that this was a place in her soul that men couldn't touch. But he wouldn't even wish for that—he would only wish that he'd be the first among the *people* that she loved. That seemed possible so long as he could prove his worth as a man, although how he might do that was completely beyond his imagination. These thoughts came to him suddenly as he went about his day doing unrelated things, eating with his friends, delivering messages for MyungBo, getting up in the morning and shaving. Most often, it was when he felt the caress of the spring breeze or glimpsed the crystals of white moonlight salting the Han River. Then he would wonder how she had changed since

they last saw each other, and whether he was now good enough for her.

**IT WAS A WARM SPRING** afternoon when the atmosphere shimmered under the quick-drying sun and everything from trees to grass to houses had a secret air of movement, of growing. HanChol narrowed his eyes against the white light, leaning against a wall and resisting the urge to put his hand on his stomach. Looking doubled over in hunger wouldn't exactly help attract customers. He had only made one won since dawn, when he broke his fast with steamed potato and barley. He'd decided not to go home for lunch until he hit the one-won fifty-cent mark, and now it was past four.

A woman in a kimono was walking toward him, and he straightened up. It was hard to know how old she was under her white makeup, but her coquettish gait and mannerisms looked young.

"*Koko kara Honmachi made ikura kakarimasuka?*" she said, smiling. How much to go to Honmachi?

"*Ni ju-sen desu,*" HanChol replied—twenty cents. She nodded, and he helped her climb inside the carriage. He almost never had Japanese customers, who were mostly concentrated in MyungDong and Honmachi and didn't venture outside, even somewhere as close as Jongno. But money was money. And the woman seemed pleased—perhaps it was the novelty of riding a Josenjing rickshaw. She broke the silence a few times to murmur about the weather, which could have been directed equally toward him or herself. The trailing sleeve of her kimono flapped rhythmically against the side of the rickshaw as they gained speed. HanChol stayed quiet until she got off at Honmachi and pressed a one-won bill into his palm, refusing change. He watched as her embroidered obi disappeared into the crowd. She didn't move him; nevertheless, he was instinctively cataloguing her in his collection of women.

HanChol was only nineteen years old. Yet he had long ceased to consider himself young or to give in to juvenile fancies. He was proud of the businesslike attitude he had toward everything, which was necessary to make any progress. What he thought of, day and

night, was first success and then much later, duty. As for love, he never regarded it as something valuable to himself. Love felt to him like a distant and mysterious mountain, which was potentially real only because others spoke of it with reverence and conviction. He just had no particular impulse to see the mountain himself; it had as little bearing on his reality as the idea of heaven and hell. The only time he thought of women with longing was when he masturbated quietly in his room, not even daring to breathe freely, since his mother and two sisters slept in the next room. Then, he would close his eyes and recall a beautiful woman he'd driven that day, perhaps a flirtatious courtesan who had called him "as handsome as a prince," or a Modern Girl whose shapely legs encased in silk stockings were clearly visible if he just turned his head around.

And yet. As he turned west out of the Japanese district, his thoughts turned to the one woman whose image wasn't confined to these nightly indulgences, who surprised him with her strange relevance to his being. When he first saw Jade outside the theater, he'd also had a sensation that he'd never had with the others: the strongest urge to talk to her. At the same time, HanChol had gotten the distinct feeling that she too wished to speak to him intimately, although the presence of her friend prevented too much openness. They had exchanged a hidden, subtle, and precious mutual understanding with fleeting glances and twinkling eyes, the way young people communicate only in the first few loves of their lives. At home that night, he had touched himself and come more powerfully than ever before.

Yes, at the beginning it had only been a physical desire and a curiosity, and nothing more—he was certain of it. Nevertheless, as he became her favorite driver and saw her several times a week, his regard for her began to acquire a specificity that he'd never felt before. To HanChol, all people belonged to certain categories: family, schoolmates, close friends, other rickshaw drivers, customers, people from whom he might benefit, and so on. He behaved toward anyone according to his or her category without any partiality. But how he thought of Jade defied his normal attitudes toward courtesans, customers, or women in general. She was all those

things, but she looked and acted nothing like the others and he only thought of her as Jade.

HanChol caught himself drifting into a reverie and shook his head forcefully. It was close to five; he'd stop by his house and eat a meal, which would be both his lunch and dinner. When he pulled inside the front yard of their thatched-roof cottage, his mother rushed out of the room where she was sewing with one of his younger sisters. The other one was out washing laundry at a creek; the three women together made a meager income by cleaning and mending laborers' clothes, a sum that amounted to only half of HanChol's.

"Hurry up and fix your brother's meal." His mother turned sharply to his sister, who was still seated inside the open door. The girl was used to their mother's abuses, but now she looked frightened. There was no more barley after their morning meal; as the oldest daughter, she was continuously called upon to make food out of nearly nothing, yet even she couldn't make miracles happen. Before sharper rebukes could fall upon his sister for his sake, HanChol stepped in.

"Mother, don't worry. I already had a bowl of soup at a tavern. Here, that's for dinner," he said, handing her the two won. She creased into a smile. "*Aigoo*, my son. My firstborn."

She urged him to stay and rest, but he shook his head and went back out with his rickshaw. His mother doted on him as she never did on his sisters; she respected and even feared him as the head of the household since age fourteen, when his father passed. Nonetheless, her constant fixation upon his bloodline, which was some obscure cadet branch of the mighty House of Andong-Kim, made him uneasy around her. Her common refrain was "If your father were still alive, his cousins would have taken us in . . ." and "You must restore our family's name, you must live up to our honor . . ." The clan still lived in prosperity in the wealthy enclave of Andong, but their family had been living apart since HanChol's grandfather's time. They were now no better than peasants, except in their strict observance of formalities and the expectation that

HanChol would go to university and enter into a respectable career, lifting them all out of their misery.

The sun was still shining above the buildings, but its warmth was being replaced by an earthy coolness, as happens on fine spring evenings.

HanChol's next customer was a well-dressed gentleman with round eyeglasses, who sedately read his newspaper the entire time to the new baseball stadium in EuljiRo. When HanChol stopped in front of his destination, he dreamily peeked out from behind the newspaper, hopped off the rickshaw, rummaged through his pockets, and said, "Oh, I didn't realize I only have ten cents on me. I'm sorry, my fellow." Before HanChol could say anything, the gentleman gave him a ten-cent bill and disappeared into the crowd. HanChol crumpled up the money in his hand and shoved it into his pocket, disgusted. People!

Hours passed more or less in the same vein. At half past ten, Jade came out of the side entrance, where HanChol was waiting for her as usual. When his eyes found her, his mood brightened immediately. It was the opening week of Jade's new play, about a girl from a once-genteel family who becomes a courtesan in order to pay for the treatment of her invalid father and gravely ill brother. Tonight she was wearing a pale blue skirt suit with high-heeled pumps. A medium-brimmed navy hat, with a silk satin band in the same shade as the suit, was pressed above her head. She held the strap of her purse with both hands and looked around searchingly, almost exactly like her character when she arrived at the harbor. The effulgence of streetlamps gathered into golden pools of light at her feet. HanChol felt in awe of her loveliness. He pulled the rickshaw toward her slowly so as to resist her effect on him.

Jade was silent as he helped her onto the rickshaw and started heading automatically toward her home. She seemed to be lost in thoughts that had nothing to do with HanChol, and that secretly bothered him. On the rare nights when Jade sat silently with a sad and pensive air, he found himself wanting to know what was wrong and to make her feel better. In the past, Jade had often gossiped cheerfully with Lotus, knowing that the driver could hear them and

yet not sparing any details of rich lovers who were paying them court. But since Lotus had moved to a different theater, Jade rode quietly and often in a more subdued state of mind, gazing at the jazz-soaked storefronts and the people walking under the cool white moonlight.

As they got on the boulevard, she broke the silence.

"Mr. HanChol, I've known you for a long time now, but you never talk about yourself."

He had the impulse to stop pulling, resisted it, and kept trotting. The quickening of his beating heart didn't have anything to do with running, however.

"I don't know what about my life could interest you," HanChol said in his deep bronze voice, without glancing back.

"Anything. Everything." Jade's eyes were full of smiles, he imagined. "For example, how old you are."

HanChol told her that he was nineteen, and she sighed.

"Younger than me, then. I'm twenty already. And you're still studying at the night school?"

"Yes, miss."

"I am sure you're brilliant. I can tell how smart a fellow is just by looking at his eyes."

HanChol was trying to process both that she thought he was intelligent, and that she'd studied his eyes. When had she even looked straight at his face?

"I can follow the others. I try my best," HanChol said modestly, though in fact, his teacher—a Christian who had studied in Hiroshima—had complimented him more than once on his uncanny brightness and exhaustive memory.

"You're being humble. I'm sure if you could've gone to school full-time, you would have passed university entrance exams already," she persisted.

HanChol had himself thought this hundreds of times. After paying for the living expenses of the household, he hardly had any tuition left even for the night school. It was impossible to tell when he'd be able to take the entrance exams, let alone how he'd be able to pay for university. Would he be able to matriculate by twenty-five or

twenty-six? He had no way of knowing. Instead of talking about his abject circumstances, he turned the subject around.

"You're intelligent as well," he said. He didn't know what he was saying until after the words were spoken, and realized he'd always thought that.

"Me?" Jade sounded full of surprise. "Why would you think that?"

"I can always tell when I look at someone's eyes," HanChol said jokingly, and feeling emboldened, turned his head over his right shoulder to steal a glance. She was staring at him with such wide eyes under her navy hat, her rosy lips in a half-moon smile.

"No one's ever told me I'm intelligent before," Jade muttered sheepishly as he turned back around to face the road.

"You just always say the right things. When you and Miss Lotus talk, for instance."

"Oh, so you were eavesdropping on us?" She pretended to be scandalized. They continued talking in a careful, but excited manner until they reached her home. He helped her down as usual; but this time, instead of keeping his head lowered as he held her hand steady, he met her eyes and smiled. Neither could say which one was holding on to the other, but for an imperceptible second, they didn't let go. It was unconscionably, irrationally sweet—that brief moment when they both knew how reluctant they were to separate. And when their hands finally parted, each one was already missing the touch of the other. Jade hid her confusion by busying herself over the fare.

"This will give you some change to buy books," she said, pressing folded bills into his hand.

"I don't want to take money from you." He shook his head, still boldly looking at her. But she gazed out above his right ear, like someone suddenly confronted by the blinding white sun. From such a lovely girl, who usually acted as though she could get any man she wanted, this was an unexpected symptom of shyness. He found it irresistible.

"If you give this ride for free, I will never hire you again for fear you might never let me pay. So just take it." Jade pressed the money into his palm more firmly, and this time he relented. He stood there

watching her lithe form slip inside the gates, and on walking back, felt that everything—cars, bicycles, singing of drunkards, freshness of night air, liquid light spilling onto the dark road—was more vivid than ever before. As he neared his house, the singing died away and the stillness was only felt more purely by the innocent, rhythmic call of the *sochuck* owl. That spring bird call had never moved him so achingly. It seemed to say all that there is to life.

**AFTER THE PERFORMANCE** on the following night, Jade sat primly in the rickshaw without initiating a conversation. She seemed determined to pretend that nothing had happened between them. HanChol was disappointed, but not hurt. If anything, her reticence only confirmed to him that something significant had taken place. He was wondering how he could break the silence when the sound of a *sochuck* bird was heard in the distance.

"Did you hear that, miss?" he asked, slowing down to a walk.

"Hear what? That bird?" Jade leaned a little forward, closer to him.

"Yes, miss. It's a *sochuck* bird."

"I always heard that song and never knew which bird it came from," Jade confessed.

"It's a brownish owl with big round eyes. When I was little, my father and I went to the South Mountain one day and found a baby owl that had fallen out of its nest. It was just a tiny thing that fit into my palm—like a small, fluffy potato."

"Oh my!" Jade couldn't feign indifference any longer. "So what happened?"

"It had a broken leg, so we brought it home. My father wrapped its leg in a bit of cloth to help it heal. My sisters and I took turns feeding it cicadas. We named it Potato."

"How precious!" she exclaimed. "Did his leg heal?"

"It did. He walked around, following me everywhere. When he got tired he would cry, asking to be put on my shoulder. And when I'd be out of the house, he'd cry then too, waiting for me by the gates for hours. But then, he got bigger, and fall came . . . And we



couldn't always keep looking for insects to feed our pet owl, even if we were still children. Our parents told us to get rid of Potato.

"So I brought him to the woods where I found him. At first, he kept crying and running after me. So I finally picked him up, put him on a tree, and said goodbye."

"That's awful. What if he just stayed there on the tree and starved to death?" Jade sounded close to tears.

"He'd been flapping his wings for a long time. I think he made it," HanChol said. Only later had he learned that *sochuck* owls have to migrate across the South Sea in the fall. He didn't tell her this because it would have caused her pain.

Jade was trying to contain the mysterious stirring within her, which started in her chest and radiated outward throughout her whole body, similar to intoxication. Love happens all at once, and also in stages. Having already fallen in love with him by sight, she was now experiencing that revelatory moment when a woman realizes what kind of soul her lover has. She felt that he had a special, tender soul—and that he could share this hidden self only with her, perhaps even that she brought it out of him. Seeing his broad-shouldered and lanky frame with its strong back, narrow waist and hips, she felt pity for the young man that he'd become—handsome and intelligent and capable, but also weighed down by his family and his circumstances. Already she wished she could lessen that premature sense of responsibility and see his face relax and light up, as it had while they were talking the night before. As naturally as some people take to books or sums or the making of money, Jade's heart was predisposed to give love. It had already reached forward in order to make this person happy.

"You must be exhausted, Mr. HanChol," she told him. "I want to get off here."

"Here, miss?" They were still several blocks away from her house.

"Yes. I'll get off here," she said firmly. "You can walk beside me if you like."

He helped her off, and she was thrilled to notice the tiniest squeeze of the hand he gave her before letting go. They walked side

by side without further conversation, and that was sweet too in its own way, being able to focus on each other's presence. Had walking ever been more pleasant? Jade wondered. She could not stop smiling. They didn't tell each other much, and yet understood each other so well. So many words could be exchanged between people without any real desire to know one another. But with the right person, one could speak much or not at all, and feel completely connected. This was what Jade realized as they walked together to her gates.

When Jade tried to pay him, he preemptively pressed something into her palm—a letter. While she blushed and gathered her composure, he gave her a handsome smile (not quite as relaxed as before) and left. She came inside the house and, in the safety of her own room, lit a candle and began reading with a pounding heart. He had admired her for years, ever since he first saw her. He had no reason to hope that she would return his feelings, but he was happy now that the burden of secrecy was lifted. He would understand if she refused to ever see him again, since he had nothing to offer her. But he only wished that she would be very, very happy, because that was what she deserved.

"But that's exactly how I feel about him! I only wish for his happiness," she said to herself, curling into her bedspread, exhilarated and pained at the same time.

The next night, HanChol waited anxiously outside the theater, not knowing if she'd be there. Months before, Jade had once alluded to Lotus's lover, who either had his chauffeur pick her up or himself drove her home in a black car. There was no reason to think Jade wouldn't also be able to secure a lover like that. Some rich man had to want her as a mistress or as a second wife—perhaps even as a legal first wife. All Seoul had admired her in *The Story of ChunHyang*, and her photographs had been in the newspapers and the magazines. And even if he had flattered and intrigued her, he was hardly in a position to start anything with a woman—not even a suitably innocent and hardworking girl, let alone an actress.

As he reflected, the side exit opened and Jade came out, her whole body seemingly looking for him only. The streetlamp cast its

light from her left, shimmering on her small but shapely forehead, the tops of her glossy eyelids, the bridge of her nose, and her left cheekbone, leaving the right side of her face under a shadow. When she found him, she lit up with a smile, and it was like when the sky turned pink before the sun rose. She looked not just beautiful, but vitally significant—full of mysterious meaning like the songs of nocturnal birds. He forgot all his inner arguments; instead he could only think about embracing her.

# 16

## Because You Were You, Standing There

1928

**OVER THE MONTHS, LOTUS HAD LEARNED THAT PRESIDENT MA DIDN'T** act the same way normal people did. He let his feelings be known: once at a restaurant, he'd forced the chef to remake the entire spread of twelve dishes because in one of them he'd tasted onions, to which he was allergic. For this reason, Lotus had been anxious about telling him her news. She waited until he was in a particularly good mood one night following the signing of a deal—a purchase of a lucrative factory in KaeSong.

"It's a huge win. One of only a few chemical manufacturers in the country. I'm going to go up there on Friday," he said, his hands on the steering wheel. He'd picked her up after her performance and they were parked near her house. "You should come with me. It would be a nice drive out in the country." He paused, noticing her silence. "Why, what's the matter?"

"I'm pregnant," Lotus blurted out, hiding her face in her hands. For a while, neither of them said anything. Then she felt him take her left wrist and slowly lower it down.

"Look at me," he said matter-of-factly. "Are you sure?"

Lotus nodded through the hot tears streaming down her face, clutching her still-flat abdomen.

"You can't keep living at your aunt's. I'll have to find you your own house. And a maid and a housekeeper. You'll be comfortable. But why are you crying?" he said.

"I thought you'd be angry with me." She sobbed, nostrils flaring. At that, President Ma laughed out loud.

"Angry? I've never been less angry in my life," he said, kissing the top of her head. "I might finally get a son."

The next morning, Lotus told the family at breakfast that she would soon be moving out. But she didn't tell them her news, basking in the power of withholding a secret. If she was being honest with herself, she could admit that she was primarily hiding it from Jade. Some irreconcilable awkwardness had entered into their relationship ever since Lotus joined the Grand Oriental Cinema, and while they still smiled at each other and exchanged pleasantries, they both acutely felt the impossibility of being frank with one another. Lotus believed that their present iciness was caused by Jade's jealousy. Now that Lotus was the star of the most prestigious theater in Seoul, and mistress to one of its wealthiest businessmen, Jade was insincere and cold, and not genuinely happy as she ought to be. On the other hand, Jade believed that their relationship was strained because Lotus had hidden her decision to move to a different theater, not even telling her almost until the last day. How could Lotus believe that Jade, her own best friend, would stand in the way of her success and happiness?

On the day of the move, Dani, Luna, and Jade helped Lotus carry the trunks of clothes to the car.

"This is a lot more than what you brought here, ten years ago," Dani joked, pretending to grimace under the weight of the package. "My arms feel like they're going to fall off." Still, it was she who had insisted on helping instead of leaving it to the maids. When everything had been stuffed inside the trunk and the backseat, Dani took Lotus's face in her hands as if she were still a child.

"You're my cousin's daughter, so we are five degrees apart. But I've always treated you as if you were my own daughter. We were a family, together in this house for ten years, eh?" She had no trace of tears in her eyes, but her voice quaked.

"We'll always be a family, Aunt Dani," Lotus said softly as she embraced her. She went to Luna, Jade, and Hesook and hugged each one. The car was already started, rumbling and emitting a stream of warm sooty smoke. The chauffeur opened the passenger-seat door for her, and they were off.

\* \* \*

**LOTUS'S DEPARTURE CAST** a subtle gloom over Dani's house. Breakfast was the time when her absence was most conspicuously felt, since that had been the meal that they all shared together. As usual, Dani vacillated between experiencing emotions passionately and restraining herself from sentimentality; the former was her nature and the latter was her principle. She never admitted to feeling sad or empty, and only the keenest observer could perceive a change in her confident self-possession. But Luna, who was familiar with Dani's inner workings, knew that she missed the girl dearly.

Luna herself felt the loss but was not devastated by it. She had grown to love her younger sister as they both got older. But that had also coincided with the shaping of their individuality, and they had needed each other less with every passing year. She was simply glad that Lotus had blossomed and found what she wanted. Luna knew that her younger sister needed only two things to be happy: a man's love and music.

As for what she herself needed to be happy, Luna was less certain. Rather, she never stopped to think about this, since for her even the very idea of happiness seemed alien and out of reach. It was no more sensible than being asked, "Would you like to live on the moon? How does that sound?" The closest thing to happiness was how she felt when her daughter curled up to her at night, begging to use her arm as a pillow. "What about your pillow?" Luna would ask, pointing at the soft silk cylinder filled with dried

chrysanthemum petals and mung beans. "No, no. I want to sleep on Mama's arm," Hesook would protest, snuggling her head toward Luna. Luna would sigh, as though exasperated, making the child giggle. They would play silly games that only they understood; Hesook would call out, "Nose, forehead, chin, cheek, eyebrow" and so on, and Luna would kiss rapidly each part that was named. Messing up and kissing the wrong place caused both of them to break into utterly senseless and joyful laughter. Looking at the pure adoration in her daughter's sweet little face, Luna welled up with the conviction that nothing and no one else mattered.

That, perhaps, was Luna's happiness, although calling it so made her feel selfish and undeserving. Luna did not particularly wish for it, and only looked forward to saving enough money to secure her and her daughter's future. She had the idea to raise Hesook as a normal, modern kind of girl. This was the reason Luna had been careful not to get into any affairs, so that Hesook might have the liberty to get educated and marry a proper man. Girls from upper-class families would often study abroad in Japan or even Europe, and Hesook would also get the best education money could buy. Luna carefully saved up almost everything she made from parties and modeling—less than either Jade or Lotus, but still substantial—so that Hesook would lack for nothing in terms of schooling or clothes. She was proud that Hesook was a good student, getting high marks in most subjects and praised by her teachers.

This was why Luna was all the more devastated when Hesook came home one afternoon and gave Luna a letter from the principal, asking her to visit the school the next day. She questioned her daughter and threatened to use the switch. Hesook, who had never been beaten in her life, broke into rivers of tears and ran away to her room. Luna immediately regretted her harshness, stroked her daughter's hair, and promised her that she wouldn't get angry again. Between sobs and hiccups, Hesook explained that she'd gotten into a fight at the school but wouldn't say anything more.

The next morning, Luna got dressed especially carefully. She picked out her most elegant summer outfit: a cropped white silk blouse and a floor-length lavender skirt. Unlike Jade and Lotus, who

increasingly preferred to wear Western dress, Luna almost always wore traditional clothes. She was the only one in the house who still dressed her hair in a braided chignon. On this day she chose a green jade *binyuh* to hold it in place.

Around noon, Luna got out of the cab in front of the Christian girls' school that Dani had also attended. The relentless July sun was reflecting on the light pink sand of the courtyard. At the moment, it was filled with an eerie silence peculiar to an empty playground in the middle of classes, lying in wait for the cheerful children. A gray-haired porter stopped her at the gates and waved her in when she said she was Hesook's mother, not knowing or caring that she was a famous courtesan. "Oh yes, you got a letter from the principal? You'll want to go to her office on the second floor," the porter said good-naturedly. She thanked him and started crossing the sun-drenched courtyard, trying to hide how she herself felt like a little girl in trouble.

\* \* \*

**UPSTAIRS IN HER OFFICE**, the principal was having coffee with a visitor, Deputy Consul Curtice. She originally hailed from Rochester, and he grew up in Ithaca; and by virtue of their neighboring hometowns, they'd relied on each other more than on anyone else among the Americans in Seoul.

"I believe you will find our students are very well-educated, polite, and devout. I have a few in mind whom I will recommend," she said, putting her cup down on the saucer with a crisp and cheerful clink. "Some very smart girls from poorer families, who would surely be forced to marry as soon as possible. This would give them a chance to use their education and earn their independence, perhaps."

Deputy Consul Curtice nodded thoughtfully. He had come to ask her help in finding a new translator and secretary at the consulate. The old translator had passed away from tuberculosis the previous winter and it was imperative to find a replacement soon. There were young men who graduated from missionaries' schools as well, but



the new consul-general had the notion that women translators and typists were cheaper and more obedient than their male counterparts. The men were more likely to get involved in political activism, whether that meant communism, the independence movement, or both. His predecessor, the former consul-general, had been more sympathetic; he'd sent the AP reporter's photographs to the secretary of state and urged the Wilson administration to take a stance against such atrocities. That integrity had a cost, and he was quickly removed from his post and reassigned to Canton.

The new consul-general stuck with the official program that the regime here was an American ally. Curtice found it difficult to agree with his supervisor on many issues; but insofar as the translator was concerned, he saw no harm in bringing a modern-educated Korean woman into the fold.

"Yes, that would be tremendously helpful, thank you," he said with a smile in his bright blue eyes, which had stayed young even as his red hair climbed higher on his forehead and his body took on the pendulous hints of middle age. As he was searching for a way to bring their meeting to a close, someone knocked quietly on the door.

"Come in," the principal said in English. But her face showed surprise when a beautiful young Korean woman walked in, blushing brightly from nerves.

"May I ask what this is regarding?" The principal switched to an unexpectedly firm and flexible Korean that she'd acquired in the past two decades. The young woman looked shocked at hearing her language come out of a white person's mouth.

"I'm Hesook's mother," the woman said in Korean, then added in English, "I am here to talk about her."

"Oh, yes, of course! I am sorry, now I remember," the principal said in a mixture of Korean and English. She rose from her chair in greeting and Curtice followed, giving a slight nod of the head in the woman's direction. "I should get going," he indicated with his eyes to his host. But she signaled that he should sit and wait for this short, unimportant meeting to finish, and he obeyed.

"Please sit down," the principal told the new guest, who shyly slid between a chair and the coffee table and settled down, resting her

white hands on her lavender skirt. As sometimes happens when meeting a stranger who is either unquestionably good-looking or ugly, the principal and Curtice were startled by the woman, who was remarkably pretty. Out of their good breeding, however, they both behaved as if they hadn't noticed. Curtice looked out the window to show that he didn't wish to intrude on their meeting. A warm breeze was coming in from the courtyard, causing the white linen curtains to flap around.

"I teach only the senior girls myself, so I don't know Hesook well," the principal said in English. "But from what her teacher tells me, Hesook is a very bright girl."

"Thank you," the woman said quietly with a bow.

"She's never caused any trouble before, so we were surprised when she got into a fight with a few of the other girls. It appears that those girls were taunting Hesook, but she was the one who started kicking and punching. Do you understand?" the principal said in a stern voice that she used indiscriminately on troublesome students, faculty, and visitors alike.

"Yes, I do," the woman said meekly, studying her lap.

"Those girls were making fun of Hesook for not having a father, which is a terrible thing, but I can't have anyone who acts violently at the school."

"You mean, you're expelling Hesook?" The woman became agitated and looked straight into the principal's eyes. "No, she is just a young girl. She made a mistake . . ." She switched to Korean and appeared to beg for forgiveness. Still seated awkwardly at the table, Curtice resisted the urge to intervene and say to the principal, Why not just let this one go?

"I know that Hesook is young, which is why this time it's only a warning," the principal said. "But please, have a talk with her about not fighting. I won't be so lenient next time."

"Thank you, thank you so much," the woman said in English, bowing deeply at the waist.

Having overheard snatches of the conversation, Curtice wondered to himself who this stranger could possibly be. She looked young enough to be a student at the school, and it was also curious

that she spoke English. Soon, his curiosity was partially satisfied: when the principal asked her where she had learned the language, the woman explained that she'd been taught by her aunt, who had been a student at this school.

After the visitor left, the principal turned to Curtice and said, "I'm sorry about that. She could have waited for us to finish, but . . ."

"No, it was no trouble, I didn't mind at all," Curtice said. "Who is she?"

"Just the mother of one of our students," the principal replied.

"She looks much too young to be a mother." The deputy consul raised his eyebrows, not bothering to conceal his thoughts. "She speaks English. You don't think a married woman could possibly want to work at the consulate—?"

"She is not married, Mr. Curtice, although I highly doubt she'd want to be a translator or a secretary," the principal said tartly. Curtice blushed, wondering how he'd offended her. The principal was at least ten years older than he was, and they had always had a mutually respectful, sexless dynamic. Nevertheless, it was clear that his interest in this stranger made her feel indignant and insulted.

"She's—what's known as a *giseng*. A very successful one, I hear. Her daughter doesn't have a father," the principal pronounced, clasping her hands together on her lap, as though that would be the end of that discussion.

Curtice looked out the window again so as not to betray his astonishment. A sudden thought came to his mind that if he could see the stranger crossing the courtyard, he would take it as a sign. A sign of what? He didn't know yet. A light breeze lifted a veil of dust and carried it up to the blue sky. When Curtice was beginning to feel afraid that he'd been looking away too long, that the principal would be offended by his inattention, the woman in the lavender skirt appeared in the frame of the window. Amid the pink sand that was blowing up, she looked a little like a traveler crossing the desert.

\* \* \*

**HANCHOL NO LONGER BROUGHT** the rickshaw to the theater after Jade's performances. Instead, they strolled home side by side slowly every night. The walk lasted nearly an hour, but neither of them felt any fatigue, even after a long day of running around town, rehearsing, and going onstage. They both felt so keenly alive simply by wandering and holding hands. They pointed out to each other the things that they saw: "Oh look at those arched windows of that department store . . ." "Did you ever notice that statue there?" Though none of those things were particularly profound, everything seemed significant and delightful and memorable. When they reached her house, he gently, almost reverentially, wrapped her in his arms and they kissed.

One night when the weather was particularly beautiful and the moon was bright, Jade pulled away from kissing him and said, "Wouldn't you like to come in?" She knew he'd been thinking of this for a long time, but that he'd never have the courage to ask her first. She led him by the hand to her pavilion, proud to be showing him where she lived.

She knew this was his first time, and that he had to be nervous. But despite being inexperienced and younger than she was, he took her as if he knew what to do. His touch was urgent, but gentle. Even when they were both undressed, he kissed her from the crown of her head to her fingertips, then all the way down to her toes. His lips traveled along her body like a cartographer, making a map of her sensations. Little sighs escaped her mouth—not like with others, to show that what they were doing was suitably pleasing, but because she couldn't help it. She looked up mesmerized at his lean but well-muscled body above her own, so patiently caressing her while delaying his own gratification. She said, "I don't want to wait any longer," and reached for him, but he kept touching her all over. "I could kiss you forever," he whispered. When he finally pressed into her body, they looked into each other's eyes in awe. The sensation of being so close was painfully exquisite. They held each other motionlessly for a while, before moving and dissolving into each other. He came first, and she expected him to roll off of her and fall

asleep as others had done. But he stayed inside her and became hard again until she also climaxed.

He lay on top of her, panting and resting his tired head on her chest as she stroked his damp hair. He caught her hand and brought it to his lips, and she glimpsed him smiling unconsciously, as though he couldn't believe his good luck.

"Your skin . . ." he said, melting into softer, fluttery kisses over her chest. And she knew exactly what he meant; the feeling of his bare skin against hers was so comfortable yet intense that she felt hungry for it even in the moment. Without speaking, they shifted positions to touch each other as much as possible, and then laughed at their silliness.

"I can hear your heart beating," he muttered. She could also feel his heart pulsing hard above her stomach. No one else had said this to her, but then no one else had made it worth noticing. Feeling his heartbeat was something she knew she would treasure for the rest of her life.

"Do you love me?" she asked.

"Yes, I love you," HanChol said simply. "I really do."

"Why? Since when?"

"Since I first saw you outside the theater. Why? Because you were you, standing there, and I was also standing there . . . It's that simple and that complicated. But it couldn't have been otherwise." He sighed and turned his face so that his right cheek pressed into her chest.

Ever since then, nothing else mattered to Jade more than loving and being loved by HanChol. She rarely spent time dwelling on her estrangement with Lotus or her success in theater. She knew she had the most important thing, something so pure and rare. When she came to Silver's house, all she'd imagined for herself was becoming a maid. Then later, she wondered whether her fate was to lie with men toward whom she had no feelings except revulsion, until cast aside for younger women and newer amusements. But by some miracle her reality was now better than anything she'd ever dreamed. In a relatively short amount of time, it turned her into a different person. The change was mostly internal, although as

happens when there is a seismic inner shift, her physicality changed as well. She would sit in front of her mirror and be startled that her eyes or her nose looked strangely different than just half a year before. She now felt so well adored that her soul itself had transformed, and her features had shaped themselves to reflect that. Jade had always been charming yet imperfect, with a narrow forehead and regular, unremarkable eyes laced with thin lashes, but now those flaws were unnoticeable. She was used to attracting attention, but never so much as now—she felt people’s eyes following her as she walked down the street or went onstage. None of that mattered to her, however. She only cared about being beautiful in his eyes.

Women, more so than men, are apt to polarize love as either giving or receiving. A wider expanse exists between those women who understand love as selfless caring, and others who cannot abide by a relationship through which they don’t somehow benefit. To Jade, even the idea of gaining something through HanChol would have tainted their love. None of the gifts and money Jade had received from her patrons had made her as happy as when she was thinking of ways to help HanChol. She had more than enough money to support him while he finished school. After losing his biggest customer, Jade, HanChol was having trouble making enough money. But Jade knew that he would have a hard time accepting her help. When she brought it up, HanChol looked offended for the first time in her presence.

“I could never take your money,” he said tautly. “I’m a man who knows how to make his own money—not take it from a woman.”

“Don’t think of it that way,” she pleaded. “I am older than you. Think of it like this: in life, there are times when you should accept help from people who are perhaps older and in a better position. And then when you’re successful, you return the favor and help out those who need it. You can’t keep going like this, spinning wheels! There has to be something that lifts you up out of the muck, and now I’m saying I want to be that something.”

She was looking at him with such loving and innocent eyes. She was completely selfless in her offer, and wasn’t seeking anything in

return. He kissed her hands and said, "I don't deserve you."

He had been considering dropping out of night school altogether rather than struggling for another six or seven years, just to get a shot at university. He had been looking at a lifetime of driving rickshaws or, when those became obsolete, becoming a hard laborer carrying bricks on his back seven days a week until his death.

Jade not only paid for his school fees, but also covered the living cost for him and his family. Unable to explain that a courtesan-actress was his benefactress, he told his mother that he'd won a scholarship. She replied, "At last you are starting to live up to your potential. But don't become arrogant and slack off. You mustn't rest until you're admitted—our family depends on your success."

HanChol went to school nine hours a day and studied at home even longer, often until after the night birds fell silent. Sometimes he found himself reading until sunrise. But after running around the city every day for years, simply learning in his seat was something he could do gladly. He caught up on several years' worth of education in just a year and finally took the university entrance exam.

The results were announced in the newspapers, and when he saw his name near the top out of all the students in the country, he was exhilarated to the point of tears by two things: first, that his life could have gone the path of abyss or that of success, and that it had taken a decisive and irrevocable turn toward the latter; second, that he had done this all on his own.

# 17

## Café Seahorn

1933

**WHEN YOUNGGU HAD FINALLY GOTTEN THE COURAGE TO ASK THE RESTAURANT** owner for his daughter's hand in marriage, JungHo had offered to make the match. But YoungGu had refused.

"JungHo, you know I'd trust you with my very life," he'd said. "But I'm worried you're going to speak with your fist again. That won't do for the father of my future bride."

He'd also ruled out eloping, although stealing a bride was a rather time-honored practice among men who couldn't pay the dowry. Instead he went to the father, knelt on his floor, and asked for his blessing. He begged for forgiveness for coming into his home and taking advantage of his restaurant, and promised to work to repay the debt.

"You hooligans have ruined my life for years and now you rob me of my daughter too? Is this some kind of a sick joke?" the father shouted. "Fine, if you really can't live without her, as you say, go out there and kneel in the courtyard. If you get up before I say you can, you won't lay a finger on my daughter. And trust me, I'll know if you get up for even a second!"



YoungGu obediently left the room and knelt in the dead center of the busy courtyard, while restaurant workers looked on and gossiped, neighbors peeked over the walls to laugh, the girl cried miserably in her own room, and his loyal dog tied to the chestnut tree barked his heart out, sensing something grave had fallen on his master. The commotion was extraordinary. But YoungGu stayed in his spot, shins digging into the dirt, head bowed in penitence, and did not get up the entire night. The next morning, a servant was trying to convince him to just give up when he collapsed and sprawled out on the spot.

Finally, the father came out of his room, shook him by the shoulders, and said, "If you swear to sever all ties with your gang of hooligans, especially that red commie JungHo, and to work hard like an honest man from this point forward . . ." He couldn't finish his words, because the idea of giving his most adored daughter to this wretch was still so appalling. Then he remembered the old saying that there is no parent who can win against his own child.

"Thank you, Father," YoungGu whispered faintly. "I will take good care of her."

From that point on, YoungGu had ostensibly dropped out of the group. He stopped going to the meetings and doing JungHo's work and started helping out at the restaurant. Soon, he was managing the place instead of his old father-in-law, who had softened with time and the birth of his beloved granddaughter.

JungHo had every right to be angry at YoungGu's defection, but he felt it was okay to let his friend go. Loach had also left the organization, saying he couldn't swear the oath that was required. In reality, the oath was hard for even JungHo. Renouncing his worldly possessions was not insurmountable, since he owned so little to begin with. (MyungBo himself had given up half of his estate to be distributed among the poor and to be used for missions—and that took true fortitude, JungHo believed.) The second part of the oath, being ready to give up his life for independence, was another matter. From observation, JungHo knew that there were two kinds of activists: those who were destined to die young in action, and others who would live on to govern, to negotiate, to write manifestos, and

so on. It was obvious that MyungBo was the latter—he was much too essential, and his scholar's hand was more useful for writing letters and declarations than firing guns. On the other hand, it had already been several years since JungHo (and MyungBo) quietly realized that he would never read or write well. This was a disqualifying weakness, he knew. JungHo let these thoughts roll through his mind in waves—they sometimes roared and clashed, and sometimes quieted down into a narrative that made sense. When he felt most calm, he believed that MyungBo would ask him to do something only he could do, at precisely the right moment.

One evening after YoungGu and Loach left, JungHo saw them for dinner at the Chinese restaurant. They were in a fine, drunken mood familiar to old friends gathered in a place of fond memories—a feeling like sitting on the grass in summer twilight. It was blissful at first, and as the night went on, took on a shape of indistinct sadness. Even though they were all still young, JungHo felt strongly that something was completely behind them already. YoungGu was a father of a daughter with another one on the way. Loach had himself saved enough money to open a general store near YoungGu's restaurant. JungHo hadn't sought to do any of those things. But if he'd been able to build something small and real with Jade by his side, that would have been everything to him. He was startled to realize he hadn't seen her in almost three months. Last time he went, he'd gotten the feeling that she had a new man, and had left feeling worse than before seeing her at all. It was a unique form of self-torture that he'd no longer administer on himself.

After saying goodbye to his friends, JungHo went alone to the stone bridge over the canal to smoke and think. Resting his elbows on the railing, he took out the silver cigarette case from his inner pocket. It was tarnished in places, and the engraving was hard to make out. But—he ran his finger over the light grooves—of course it was still there. Time had the effect of muting everything, but it could never erase something real.

From time to time, JungHo went to certain low-end restaurants where there were women who took care of his needs in the back room. They were not courtesans, just whores who lay with anyone

for a price, but he liked them and hungered for them. With one very young girl, who couldn't have been more than eighteen at most, he'd felt a sort of brotherly affection along with physical desire. This didn't strike him as an infidelity to Jade because it helped him keep the better parts of him for her over such a long time, and so was maybe an act of faith. He considered going to see this girl. It would be nice to lie in someone's arms for a while. Then, shaking his head, he decided against it.

It occurred to him now that he had never just told Jade his true feelings. Perhaps she knew and was refusing to acknowledge it. Perhaps she hadn't seen him that way but would now realize what's always been in front of her. When he arrived at her house, the maid told him she was out and asked if he'd wait inside. He opted to stay outside to breathe a little better in the fresh air.

He was wearing his only winter suit, one of two shirts, and an old overcoat, but everything was clean, pressed, and starched by MyungBo's housekeeper. No one could say he looked like a dirty street urchin or an outcast. Some women passed by and glanced at him with friendly curiosity, which bolstered his confidence. He was finally ready to tell her.

\* \* \*

**JADE HAD GONE OUT** that morning to the set of her new film near the Han River. It was chilly and windy by the water, and she wasn't feeling well. Between takes, her costar asked her if she was all right.

"I'm just a little tired, but I'll be okay," she replied.

"It's too cold today. I feel sorry you have to be in that thin little blouse," he said with a smile. It was the kind of smile that men give to show, Yes, I care about you. Jade knew her costar liked her, and though she never planned on returning his feelings, his consistent availability made her feel immediately better.

She was suffering because HanChol had graduated from university, and instead of allowing them to begin their new life together, it had only brought on fresh anxieties. At first, it shocked both of them that he couldn't find a job immediately. Many

companies had laid off workers since the market crash, and only a few were hiring new employees. There were thousands of applicants for perhaps five or ten openings at a firm, which were first given to the Japanese and then the pro-Japanese elites. Without family connections or wealth, a degree was utterly worthless. Out of pride, HanChol refused to write letters to his estranged Andong relatives or hobnob with young bourgeois men from college—although avoiding the latter, strictly speaking, was less from his integrity than from an instinctive understanding that they would not welcome him. The more Jade tried to soothe him, the more HanChol acted aloof and cold, because he found himself becoming isolated in a woman's love when he should be liberated in the company of other men. Jade knew that he felt this way. So she tried to demand as little as possible from him, even if that ground her down with unhappiness.

Jade had believed that all he required was some distance and a job, and rejoiced when HanChol finally found a position as a mechanic at a bicycle shop. It didn't even require a college degree, but he had already spent months sending résumés to dozens of different companies and banks to no avail. If HanChol was disappointed, he hid it well. Years of fixing his own rickshaw soon gave him the ability to figure out any problems that a bicycle might have just by looking and tinkering for a few minutes. The night before, HanChol had come over and told her how he had even fixed his boss's own bicycle.

"This job wasn't what I had in mind exactly, but it's at least consistent. And my boss pays better than most. He said he was very impressed by how quickly I fixed his brakes, and we talked a little about what I had studied in university," HanChol said in bed. His right arm was wrapped around Jade, whose head with its cropped, wavy hair was resting snugly on his shoulder.

"See? He recognizes your talent. Before long, he will give you more important tasks and promote you. And then you'll be set." Jade beamed at him. Although she refrained from even thinking this directly in her head, she had a growing anticipation regarding their future, and she thought that HanChol would bring it up once he felt stabilized. While he was studying, he used to say from time to time

that he wouldn't let her down and that he would make her happy. More than a few times, he had said he wished that they could be together forever. Hearing these words in his arms had given her a feeling of pure luminescence, like a firefly that stores up the sun's rays by day and fluoresces by night—humble yet miraculously alive. It was that awareness of having tasted life, of being *kissed* by life. But her happiness was dependent on him and thus easily broken.

HanChol had stopped saying that he wished they could be together forever. Since when exactly, Jade could not know.

Instead of those tender words, he mindlessly squeezed her shoulder and said, "Yes, I hope I'll move up in this job. I mean to show him what I can do. He is rather absent-minded, and the business is run very badly by an associate . . ."

What she had wanted to hear was that once he was established, he would tell his mother about her and that arrangements would be made. With disappointment Jade sensed that he spoke rather more about himself than about her or them together. So she clung to him all the more affectionately. "Kiss me," she whispered, guiding his narrow hips over her. She fell into the familiar pleasure as he kissed her breasts and plunged himself into her with the same longing and urgency. Her face lit up when she became certain that he still desired her just as much as at the beginning. A man's eyes revealed everything while making love. But after finishing, he no longer kissed her or broke into that unconscious smile.

All afternoon, Jade mindlessly went through her scenes, preoccupied by HanChol. When the filming wrapped in the early evening, her costar asked, "Aren't you in the mood for something hot after all this? Would you like to come with me to get some udon?"

He had a wonderful, anxious twinkle in his attractive eyes. His elegant wool suit was impeccably cut and pressed, and she had once laughed to herself imagining that it could stand up on its own without a wearer. But he really was a very nice man.

"Oh, thank you but I can't today," Jade replied, blushing. "I have plans already. Some other day, perhaps." She pulled on her pale blue coat with a rabbit fur collar, noticing how her costar was trying to

hide his disappointment and feeling both pity and elation. She bowed to him and got into a cab, which took her to Lotus's villa.

"It's been such a long time. Oh, you look cold! Hurry up and come inside." Lotus greeted her at the front gates herself, placing a hand on her friend's back. They rarely spent time together, and several months had passed since Lotus had last come to Dani's house. But Lotus had called her, asking her to visit, and she'd accepted. They both felt a little disingenuous in each other's presence but tried sincerely, as old friends do, to conceal that artificiality.

"Where's Sunmi? How is the little darling?" Jade asked, looking around for Lotus's daughter, who had turned three. Sunmi had gone for a walk with her maid, and her mother had the happy look of a parent relieved of a toddler.

"You are so lucky you don't have a child, Jade," Lotus said in her old familiar tone, once they were settled in her room. "Not that I don't love her, because of course I would do anything for my daughter, but . . . I miss my old life. The stage, the performances . . ."

"You can surely go back? They still play your record at all the cafés, you know." Before Sunmi was born, Lotus had recorded some songs that had turned her into a household name. It had given her a small fortune, and President Ma a larger one.

"Do they really? I'm hardly the one to know—I haven't gone out at night in ages." Lotus sighed. "Sometimes I just really miss the old days, don't you, Jade? When everything wonderful seemed possible? Now I'm not so sure. I just try to—" She faltered. "I just try to keep my head up."

"I do miss the old days. We were all so innocent." Jade fought the tears in her eyes. She was thinking of Lotus and HanChol and every other person she had once loved with absolute certainty and purity, without fear of getting hurt. Even JungHo had quietly slipped away from her side, and she regretted not being a better friend to him. Lotus reached over and patted her arm, and she laughed. The hotness of tears was somehow very healing.

"I have an idea," Jade said between snuffles. "Why don't we go out this evening? To be honest, I could really use a drink."

Lotus resisted the suggestion for only a moment; she was actually thrilled to have an outing. Humming softly, she sat down in front of her vanity with its powders and rouges. Although she was never beautiful, she still looked young. Her new hairstyle was similar to Jade's, cut to shoulder length and curled with tongs, and it suited her features.

The maid and Sunmi returned as she was choosing her outfit. Jade noticed that Lotus's daughter was not a pretty child, felt guilty for having this thought, and thus acted overly awed by her. The nanny prompted Sunmi to say hello. She only put a tiny finger on her lips, staring around the room with a slow watchfulness that struck Jade as unendearing.

Lotus said distractedly, "She's so quiet, so polite. She never cries in front of me. Once she fell down while the nanny was away, and she screwed up her whole face trying to keep herself from crying." Hearing this, Jade resolved to show Sunmi genuine warmth and kissed her on top of her head. Lotus lightly raked the child's new hair, uncut and translucent like dewy spider silk. "There, there . . . And now it's time for bed," she said, sending the girl and her nanny away in a hurry.

The evening was blustery and overcast. Lotus selected a maroon silk dress, a cloche, and a dark green overcoat—autumnal and rich against the grayness awaiting them outside. She was buoyed by the voluptuous pleasure of being perfectly dressed for a certain kind of weather. Jade was already putting on her shoes when Lotus stopped at her vanity to roll a cigarette. She smoked it halfway before she noticed Jade's impatience.

"It's mostly tobacco and a bit of opium. Just to take the edge off," she said. "You want to try it?"

"No, I'm fine. At this rate we'll still be here at midnight," Jade said, and Lotus put out the cigarette carefully and left it on her ashtray.

When they finally set off, a hoarse wind was blowing away empty pails by the well and maids were skidding about, tearing off the

washings from clothing lines.

There were countless cafés in Seoul, and each had its own following. The businessmen and pro-Japanese wealthy went to Café Vienna; the Nationalists went to Café Terrace; the Communists went to the Yellow Horse; the students and the artists went to Café Gitane; and the Japanese went to their own cafés, run by the Japanese. But everyone who was known in society went to Café Seahorn, which was owned by a young bourgeois poet. Somehow the fact that he was a pro-Japanese landowner's son with the best education, but also a Leftist and an artist who believed in free love, made it possible for him to attract the most interesting people from every corner of society. Jade was acquainted with him, and this was where she was taking her friend.

"Isn't this lovely? You can see everyone from this spot," Jade said to Lotus as they slid into the crimson leather booth. She turned toward the pretty waitress and ordered two cups of mocha.

"Why is this so much more delicious than normal coffee?" Lotus whispered.

"It has chocolate in it— isn't it amazing?" Jade giggled. "We start with this, then we'll have some alcohol. You see how people are just talking now. Later on, everyone will be dancing. Oh, they're playing 'La Paloma'!" Jade flitted from one thought to the next. She pointed out a well-known woman painter who'd married a diplomat and traveled the world with him; but while abroad, she had an affair with her husband's best friend, and he divorced her as soon as they returned. Now she struggled to make a living by selling paintings and doing illustrations for magazines. There was also a novelist who was sitting alone, ostensibly reading an American magazine that was stocked at the café, but was really there for one of the waitresses, who was his mistress.

"They all go for the café girls these days. More modern than the courtesans, I've been told," Jade said, glancing at their waitress, whose apron emphasized her tiny waist. She looked no older than twenty. "And not as demanding as high-born Modern Girls."

"Sometimes it feels strange to think that we started out learning classical poetry and traditional songs at that pavilion under the



weeping willow. And my mother in her regal silks and jewels, and her lifelong devotion to the one man who gave her that silver ring . . . That feels like a hundred years ago."

"Don't you miss her? Why don't you take Sunmi to visit her in PyongYang?"

"President Ma wouldn't allow it," Lotus said quietly to her cup of mocha. The music changed. A young gentleman was headed their way, and they both smiled in preparation for his arrival.

"Miss Jade, what a pleasure. Why have you been away for so long? We've missed you here," said the gentleman, who was the poet-owner of the café. He was somewhere between twenty-five and thirty, of an average height and build. His shirtwaist sans jacket, the horn-rimmed glasses, and amiable mannerisms were proof of his bohemian status. He took hold of Jade's left hand and kissed it passionately, as if to say, "this is only half in jest." When Jade introduced her friend, he was equally overjoyed to meet the famous singer and ordered a round of American whiskey to be brought out. He had the gift of talking to two women with equal attention and flirting without implication.

"So what does the name mean? Seahorn," Lotus asked him, awash in her first taste of whiskey.

"Oh, it's something I made up. You know, we all have those things that we just love without rationality. Actually, if it's rational, then it's not really love. So the thing I love the most in the world . . ." The gentleman lingered over his words, licking the whiskey off his lips.

"It's the sound of ships. When I was a student, I once traveled to Busan on my own. I lived in a boardinghouse near the harbor for a month, just reading and writing from morning until nightfall. After dark, I would light a candle to keep going, and it was possible to believe that there was nothing in the world except myself and my books. It felt like my room was the cabin of a ship, somewhere out in the middle of the ocean. And every afternoon between three and four P.M., there would be the sound of the ships at the dock. The big ships would go, *BOO—BOOOO* . . . and the smaller ones would answer, *Doo—doooo* . . . Those ship horns made me happier than I'd

ever felt in my life. If I could bottle that sound, I would pour it little by little when I'm sad and drink it like whiskey." He smiled. "Have you ever been to the sea, Miss Lotus?"

Neither Lotus nor Jade had ever been to the sea. Not even to InCheon, which was so close.

"That's right, you are both Northerners . . . Of course, that's why you two are so pretty. Not for nothing that PyongYang courtesans are the most celebrated of all. Oh, the song has just ended. If you'll excuse me, I'm going to put on another record." He bowed and turned away.

"How charming he is," Lotus said, once he was out of earshot.

"Yes, but don't you also find that he's not all there with you?" Jade took another sip of her whiskey. "His story for instance. It's like he wasn't telling it *for us*, not really. He's told that story to anyone who asks. He doesn't really care about us knowing, ultimately. Why are you smiling? Am I too cynical?"

"I'm smiling because I love you so dearly. My oldest friend." Lotus embraced Jade with one arm.

"But do you agree? Don't you think I'm right?" Jade was thinking of the story of the owl HanChol had told. He'd always made her feel that he was telling that story only for her. He'd wanted to be understood by *her*. She missed him terribly.

"Yes, you are right. But you were always pickier with men. Oh, listen, Jade!" They both stopped speaking; it was Lotus's record that was put on the gramophone. The poet-owner waved at them from across the room. Couples were starting to get up and dance, as if the music had awakened them from sleep like enchanted people in a fairy tale. The liquid light of the lamps spilled over them and their shadows whirled around the walls.

"I'm so glad you brought me here." Lotus put her head on Jade's shoulder. "You know, President Ma doesn't love me and hasn't for a long time. He doesn't even pretend to love Sunmi—a fourth daughter and a bastard at that, when he'd really wanted a son. I'm pretty sure too that he's been sleeping with that whore of a secretary." Lotus actually hadn't thought about the last part, but once she'd spoken it out loud she knew it had to be true.

"I'm afraid he will leave me. Or I think about leaving him. It sounds like two completely different things but the end result is the same—he'd be fine, better than fine, and I'd be destroyed. So I dread both options . . . but I'm so unhappy now. What should I do?"

"You don't have to stay with him forever," Jade said, taking her friend's hand.

"But no one else will ever love me again. I will be an old and abandoned woman, a cast-off mistress."

"You see that painter, the one who was married to the diplomat." Jade indicated with her glance at the woman in a crimson velvet dress, who was now dancing with the poet-owner. "She was thirty with four children by the time she was having affairs in Paris and Berlin. You're only twenty-five and with one child." The painter whispered something in her partner's ear and then they threw their heads back in laughter. It was possible to believe that she didn't care about her ex-husband, or his best friend—her lover—who had also abandoned her.

"And now no one in her family acknowledges her and people jeer at her behind her back. No, that's not for me." Lotus sighed. "The luckiest one among us is my sister, right?"

"Right."

Luna was thirty years old and still as lovely as ever. She had bought herself out of the courtesan guild registry and worked as a secretary at the American consulate. It paid her decently and allowed her to be independent. Her supervisor was besotted with her, but she pretended not to notice. Unlike the two younger women, Luna seemed content to be left alone. Solitude became her like a beautiful coat.

The pretty waitress returned with two glasses of golden-brown liquor. "Cognac, compliments of the gentleman in the corner booth," she said, pointing with her glance. "Not the officer. The one with the bow tie," she added. Jade froze when she recognized his face. He was no longer in uniform but still wore the same arrogant smile while studying her from across the room. He said something to his friend, picked up his own glass, and started heading to their table in his confident, quick strides.

# 18

## Rainy Night

1933

**"WHY DON'T YOU COME WITH ME? DON'T BE BORING," COUNT ITO** said to Colonel Yamada, putting out his cigarette on the crystal ashtray.

"What is this about? I can't keep up with your whims."

"Don't you have eyes? You can see that there are two women at that table. One of them is quite beautiful, maybe even extraordinary. I actually met her years ago."

"I don't understand your fascination with these café girls and prostitutes." Colonel Yamada smiled coldly, shaking his head. He was on leave from the war in Manchuria and was meeting his brother-in-law for the first time in three years. After the harshness at the front fighting both the Chinese and the Korean armies, the carefree and ignorant ways of Ito and society in general rankled him.

"She's not a café girl. She's a movie actress," Ito countered, already slipping out of the booth.

Ito was one of those men who obsess over a woman and then forget about her quite completely and suddenly. Since walking out of Jade's dressing room eight years ago, Ito had not thought once about her. That encounter had satisfied his appetite, and he'd found other cravings. Some of that was for other women, but he never was

truly interested in women or even people in general. There was always an element of lowering himself when he got too near another person—this, indeed, was why he preferred Yamada, in whose company he felt the debasement the least. Instead of people, Ito liked beautiful objects, ideas, and the empty space between things and ideas. He would have been perfectly happy to slip inside that white void and breathe in the cool, fresh air for the rest of his life.

Occasionally, however, Ito became interested in others almost in spite of himself. Jade had completely changed since the last time he'd seen her. It wasn't just that she was wearing a Western dress or that she'd cut her hair and curled it with tongs. Even her features looked quite different and somehow more captivating. Yet he'd recognized her by her immutable essence, a certain halo around her physique. He wanted to study her up close.

"It's been a very long time since we last saw each other," he said as he sat down next to her in the booth. She glared at him with eyes that seemed even brighter than before. Her friend, fashionably dressed but unquestionably homely, also looked insulted by his overture. He paid her no more attention than to a piece of counterfeit antique.

"How have you been? I've noticed your films," Ito said, his gaze fixed on Jade.

"Colonel," Jade said in slow and measured Japanese. "I've no doubt there are plenty of women here who would be happy to talk to you. I'm not one of them."

"But they don't interest me. Look, do you know what it's like when one has everything?"

"Can't imagine," Jade said sarcastically; nevertheless, Ito knew she was being pulled in.

"I have wealth, youth, intelligence, power, women . . . There's nothing I lack. I never have to try very hard. It starts to become very dull—even the company of pretty women. It's so rare to see something that genuinely piques my interest, as you do."

"Why?"

Ito rested his chin on one hand and looked into Jade's lovely black eyes. Her skin was lucent and velvety, from her cheeks all the

way to the marble-like décolletage above her V-shaped neckline. She was at her peak radiance as a woman and was not even aware of it. It almost gave him pain.

"I will tell you if you dance with me," he said at last. "Don't refuse. You're a dancer and this is a terrific waltz."

He stood up and extended his hand. People were watching them out of the corners of their eyes: the handsome Japanese millionaire, newly made a count, who had just bought gold and iron mines from a French businessman; and the famous actress in all the movies. She took his hand.

Everyone watched them dance. The normally well-trained café girls stopped serving the guests and stood off to the side to whisper to one another. The count and the actress made a brilliant pair.

Yamada observed the change in his friend with quiet fascination. Ito moved with easy confidence, drawing the woman's waist close to his body with one arm. Yamada had never danced before in his life. For a moment he imagined it was himself whose arm encircled the beautiful woman in the middle of the dance floor. Ito had been right about her—she was exceptional. It was not just her face and body, which were both imperfect, but the quality of her presence and movement that drew one's eyes.

The couple parted when the song ended, and Ito walked over to Yamada's table.

"She wants to leave, and I said I'll give her a ride back. Will you be okay taking a cab?"

"Of course."

"I'll see you soon. Tell Mineko I said hello."

**LOTUS AND JADE WALKED OUT** together and Ito followed, putting on his coat one sleeve after the other; he opened the car door himself for them and got in on the other side. By the time the car stopped in front of Lotus's house, misty streaks had turned into a heavy, icy downpour. Jade hugged her friend goodbye, but sensed that the wall between them had returned, even more impenetrable than before. It made her feel uneasy and depressed, and she kept her face turned resolutely to the window on the way to her home. The car was silent

save for the metallic patter on the roof and the wheels churning over the mud like paddles of a boat.

"You can stop right here," Jade said in front of her house, and the driver pulled over. "Thank you for the ride."

"Wait." Ito grabbed her hand. "Can I come in?"

Jade shook her head.

"Come now, we had a nice time tonight. You can't still be mad at me for behaving roughly all those years ago."

"You might seem nicer now, and you're no longer in the military, but you're still the same. I will never like you." As Jade spoke, the image of Ito in her dressing room flashed before her eyes and reminded her of his true essence—his casual brutality.

"Liking has nothing to do with anything. My wife and I have never liked each other and we have the best marriage." Ito smiled contemptuously. "There is no love such as the ones you see in novels and films. Between a man and a woman, the only thing that matters is the exchange of what each one needs from the other . . . Indeed, a bit of dislike can add to the passion, I find." He pulled her wrist toward him and leaned in to kiss her neck.

"I need nothing from you," she said, pushing him away.

"Giving some chase is fine but don't be stupid. I hate stupidity," he said savagely just before she shook herself free of his grip, opened the door, and dashed out.

She made a run for her house before Ito could catch up with her. Over the din of the downpour, she thought she could hear his car door opening.

There was a man in a newsboy cap and a neat overcoat under the eaves of her front gates, waiting for the rain to pass. She realized that it was JungHo and ran straight into his arms.

"I'm so glad you're here," she said, embracing him for the first time.

"Jade!" JungHo said in a low voice, then craned his neck around her to glare at the black car. "What's the matter? Whose car is that?"

Jade knew that JungHo would do anything to protect her, or even just to defend her honor. "It's no one," she said.

"You know, if anyone ever tries to harm you, all you need to do is say a word." JungHo clenched his jaw, shooting deadly glances at the car. He looked back into her eyes as though begging for the chance to prove his loyalty. Jade was beginning to fear that Ito would get out of the car and the two men would come face-to-face, when the maid finally heard the bell over the downpour and opened the gates.

Jade said with relief, "Come inside. Let's have some tea."

\* \* \*

**INSTEAD OF THE SITTING ROOM,** Jade led him to her bedroom. JungHo took this as a good sign; and she had embraced him so intensely just now that he had to try hard to maintain his composure. After the maid left them alone with some tea, they sat facing each other with their pruney hands around the steaming cups.

"So why did you come by so late at night?" Jade said, then paused. "No, I didn't say it right. I was thinking earlier how we haven't talked to each other in a long time. I missed you."

"I missed you too, Jade," JungHo said. "I always miss you."

She laughed, putting down her cup. "Well, then come see me more often! You know how to find me."

"Yes, but I wish sometimes that you'd want to find me too," JungHo said with difficulty. "I feel like I'm not that important to you."

"Of course you are important to me. You're one of my two oldest friends. You even saved Luna's life!"

JungHo was beginning to feel a bit more encouraged, and at any rate, he was tired of hiding any longer.

"Jade, what I mean is that I love you. And I wonder if you also love me."

As he said those words, Jade cast her eyes down on her lap. Her fingertips were still red from being in the rain.

"I love you too, of course, JungHo. I've always admired you even when we were little. Do you know why? Because you weren't afraid of anything. I was just in awe of how fearless you were even when



you had nothing. When we were little Lotus used to tease that I was a coward. You helped me become more courageous—like you.” Jade laughed a little. “But I’m in love with someone else. I’m truly sorry.”

Even though he had somewhat expected this all along, he inwardly keeled over at those words. “Who is it?” he asked without thinking. “Some rich playboy?”

“His name is Kim HanChol. He’s just a repairman at a bicycle shop.” Jade smiled faintly.

JungHo had difficulty processing that he’d spent all these years trying to improve himself for her and that she was in love with some mechanic. He let out a confused laugh and she took it to mean that the tension was over, that they could go back to being friends.

“I guess poor guys are my type,” she joked. “I don’t ever have to talk about HanChol with you. It would just kill me to lose you over this. As life goes on I’m realizing more and more that it’s impossible to replace very old friends. Hold on, let me show you something.”

Jade got up, went to her sideboard, and brought back something in her hand. She dropped it into JungHo’s palm.

“See, this is the sea glass you tossed over the wall all those years ago. I kept it.”

JungHo stared at the smooth green pebble and felt all the ways people keep each other in their lives through material and immaterial means—words, memories, gestures, meaningless objects that become tokens and then turn back into meaningless objects—resting snugly in the palm of his hand. It was both unfathomably heavy and light as a feather. He gave it back to Jade.

“Don’t worry, I’m not going anywhere,” he said to her.

# 19

## Hoarfrost

1934

**ALL THE MEN IN THE WORLD FALL UNDER ONE OF TWO CATEGORIES.**

First—and far more numerous—is the man who discovers at some point in his life that he cannot and will not succeed any further beyond his present state. Then he must find some way to rationalize his lot in life and learn to become content with it. For the poorest of the poor, this point is reached remarkably quickly—before the age of twenty. Those who have had the benefit of education eventually come to the same realization between thirty and forty. Some, by virtue of birth, ambition, and talent, arrive at the reckoning around fifty, at which point the winding down does not seem so appalling.

The second and exceedingly rare type of man is he who never has to give up rising and expanding until the end of his life. Kim SungSoo belonged to this group not only by his birth, which already entitled him to fertile fields across four counties in the province, but also by his marriage to an only daughter of a minister. Instead of adopting a male relative as a son, his father-in-law had left his estate to his daughter upon his passing. Furthermore, SungSoo's first cousin—his uncle's only child—had died of a freak accident the following year, when his heart stopped midcoitus with his pretty

young mistress. Though the uncle was still living, SungSoo was his heir as well, elegantly combining the wealth of the family's two branches.

SungSoo was not so vulgar or ignorant as to be unaware of his extraordinary good luck. From time to time, he indeed felt that life had been unfairly generous to him. At fifty-one, he was at the height of middle-aged vigor, still going into the office, publishing books regularly, and not dissipated and lazy as were many of his peers. Others he knew had drifted aimlessly, unable to find a suitable occupation as the economy tanked and family fortunes dwindled, and some of them lost the will to live. Three years ago already, his friend the playwright had jumped off a bridge into the Han River. SungSoo had been sad, briefly, but as he aged he was less able to feel sorry for anyone else. Misfortunes of others only cemented his belief that he was quite exceptional. All of Seoul knew him and respected him, except for underground Communists, who would soon succumb to the government crackdown.

Only one thing weighed on him. It was that his wealth, though astronomical, also seemed to get drained quite quickly. He himself had always enjoyed spending money, and he had no plans to cut down on his habits of restaurants, clothes, and women. But he had not expected how much his only son would take after him in squandering the family fortune. He did everything SungSoo did but on a grander scale, and added his own vices of gambling and opium. SungSoo had already paid for debts amounting to the sale of a couple of prosperous villages and adjoining farmland, and his patience had reached its limits.

Adding to the unstable state of his affairs was the increase in property taxes, designed to squeeze the Korean landowners so that they would voluntarily give up their land. When the gentry finally decided to sell their estates, the Japanese would be hovering nearby, waiting to snatch up the land. This morning SungSoo had received a letter from his father in the country on this very issue. He complained of the local police, who had been showing the Japanese nobles around his property—ostensibly for a tour, but really to subtly pressure him.

These pesky worries had settled on SungSoo's mind during his walk and he swatted them away when he reached his bicycle shop. The door was open, although it was a frosty late autumn afternoon. Inside, the manager and the senior repairman were chatting over some steamed buns and tea, while the junior repairman was crouched next to a bike. SungSoo frowned and cleared his throat, and the manager snapped to attention.

"We weren't expecting you," the manager said, smiling and wringing his hands. He was upset that SungSoo, who was largely absent, had chosen this day to do his year-end check-in. "Let us get you a cup of tea. HanChol! Some tea, immediately!" he barked at the junior repairman.

HanChol unfolded his strong, tall body, rose obediently from his post, and made as to fetch the tea from the back room. SungSoo frowned at the manager.

"That's not necessary. I would like to look at the ledger with you if you're not busy," he said. "Also, my kid wanted to get her bike fixed. She'll be dropping by."

SungSoo went into the back room and the manager followed. For the next hour, they looked together at the ledger which, for the first time in all these years, had settled evenly without any missing or unexplained sums.

"Excellent bookkeeping this year," SungSoo muttered. The manager smiled and bowed a few times in rapid succession, protesting modestly.

"Just doing my job, sir."

"But the business is still barely breaking even. Why is that?" SungSoo asked.

"Well sir, these are hard times . . ." the manager began, but SungSoo waved him into silence.

"That's fine. You may leave. Oh, and ask the junior guy to come in."

"You mean Kim HanChol?"

"There is only one junior guy, isn't there?" SungSoo asked sarcastically and the manager bowed out.

When HanChol came into the room, SungSoo gestured at the chair facing him.

"So, you've been here for a year now," SungSoo said once the younger man was seated. "I noticed that you've been doing the bookkeeping instead of the manager. He took all the credit, of course, but I know it was you."

HanChol remained silent. He was a good-looking young man, SungSoo thought, noticing his intelligent expression and attentive posture.

"Yes, sir, I have been helping with the bookkeeping," the young man admitted.

"How is the repair work? Too much, on top of the bookkeeping?"

"Not at all, sir. I want to help wherever I'm needed."

"But you graduated from university. You can't be happy listening to those morons ordering you around. The manager didn't even graduate from high school—his ledgers were a horror, until you came in," SungSoo said, uncrossing and then recrossing his legs. "What do you really want to do? If you could become the manager of this shop, would that please you?" SungSoo smiled. He liked the kid, and he had been toying with the idea of firing the manager for a few years.

HanChol took in a deep breath. "No, sir."

"You're saying you want to be a junior repairman for the rest of your life?" SungSoo was disappointed; for a moment, he had thought that this poor kid could have some potential. But no matter how much education one received, poverty was ingrained in blood.

"Sir, I don't want to work with bicycles all my life . . . I think that I would like to work with cars one day."

"You mean fix cars?"

"No, I meant making them."

"Make cars? My fellow, what do you know about that?" SungSoo frowned. First he thought the kid was smart, then unambitious—now, he thought the kid was delusional. "There are two hundred cars in Seoul, and all are imported. No Korean knows how to make cars."

HanChol didn't flinch or cast his eyes down, however. "That's true now, but it won't always be like that. I didn't know how to make a bicycle, but now I can put one together with the right parts. If I learn to repair cars, I'll learn how to make one too."

SungSoo knit his brows, shaking his head. "Listen. You're obviously intelligent. I could see that right away, although I haven't been around much here. But you don't understand the world, as I do . . . Where is your family from?"

"I was born in Seoul, but my family is originally from Andong."

"You mean you're an Andong-Kim?" SungSoo blurted out, and HanChol gave a slight bow of his head. His intuition about the kid being exceptional might prove true, after all. He surely came from an impoverished cadet branch, but he still belonged to one of the most important families in the country—one that even kings have feared over the centuries. SungSoo cleared his throat.

"If you are so keen on learning how cars work, you can help my chauffeur repair it from time to time. I'll tell him to watch over you."

HanChol bowed his head gratefully, and his boss continued.

"Also, I want you to oversee my bookkeeping. Not just over this shop, but also my publishing house. There, the affairs are in even worse order—the business manager is a terrible accountant, and we're always operating at a loss."

"Where would I . . ."

"You'd work next to my office at the publishing house, reporting directly to me. Starting tomorrow." SungSoo rose and walked out of the back room. In the main section of the shop, a young girl in school uniform was being waited on by the manager.

"Father!" she said when she spotted SungSoo.

"How was school today?" SungSoo said indulgently to his favorite child. When SeoHee was younger, he had found her dull and uninteresting, just like all children. As she grew into a pretty adolescent, however, SungSoo began to enjoy spending time with her and spoiling her with gifts.

"It was good! I did well in my algebra exam," SeoHee said in a bright staccato. Her soft black hair was bobbed and parted sideways.

It went well with her uniform of a white blouse, a navy jumper, and a midlength navy skirt.

"Good, good. So what's wrong with the bicycle?"

SeoHee began to explain rapidly how whenever she rode on flat ground, it was fine, but when she'd go downhill, the bike would start to skew right on its own. As she did so she noticed HanChol standing off to the side, and began fidgeting with her glossy black hair.

"HanChol, take a look at the bike, will you? I have to go back to the office for a meeting," SungSoo said. "What are you going to do now, SeoHee? Go straight home and study?"

"Father, I studied so hard for my exam! Today I want to go by the bookstore." The girl smiled winningly. She had inherited SungSoo's charm and good looks but not his selfishness, which made her easy to adore.

"Oh, you mean the record store and the bakery . . ." SungSoo teased, but he was pulling out his wallet nonetheless. "Don't tell your mother." He winked as he handed over her allowance.

"Thank you, Father!" she shouted and waved her father away. Meanwhile, HanChol was already crouched next to her bike with his toolbox. SeoHee walked over to him.

"How long will it take to fix?" she asked shyly, both wanting and not wanting to catch his eyes.

"This shouldn't take more than an hour," HanChol replied, keeping his eyes on the bike. He had noticed that SeoHee was a very pretty girl and that she was stealing glances at him. It caused him discomfort.

"I could come back in an hour . . . But then it would be dark, and my mother would worry. Should I come back tomorrow?"

"Yes," HanChol said, finally straightening up and looking at her. It would be rude otherwise. "Come back tomorrow please."

\* \* \*

**WINTER CAME EARLY THAT YEAR.** The waterbirds from Siberia were settled around the shimmering sheets of ice covering the Han River. The air smelled of snow and woodfire on Luna's wedding day.

After years of politely rebuffing the deputy consul's advances, she had finally relented and accepted his proposal. She had become fond of Curtice's kind blue eyes and his fiery red hair that shockingly sprouted not just on his head, but also on the back of his neck and even on the tops of his hands. Though he had a wild appearance, he had the most gentle disposition. He stood up when she entered the room and always let her walk in front of him. Every request came with a Please and a Thank you. Most of all, he promised her that they would move to America, where Hesook would receive the best education. That was what turned the tide in his favor.

They were getting married in a Catholic church with stained glass windows and a steeple that rose high above the Seoul skyline. The wedding was in the afternoon, but the whole household was up and preparing before sunrise. Dani herself was helping Luna bathe and brush her hair. Jade was laying out the clothes for the ceremony and the reception. The maids were making the breakfast and the reception food.

At nine, Lotus brought her mother from the train station.

"*Unni!*" Dani was the first to embrace Silver at the gates. They clasped each other and didn't let go for a long time, not able to say much more. Each one was surprised at how much lighter and airier the other had become over the years, at that sun-bleached quality a woman's body acquired after middle age. Silver was always slender, but she was now shrunken. She had not dyed her hair black, as fashionable women did these days, and her silver-streaked hair, parted severely in the middle and coiled into a chignon, made her look ten years older than Dani.

The younger cousin had kept up with the latest trends, and her careful maintenance had lent her appearance a graceful orderliness that was lacking in most middle-aged women. But at forty-nine she was well past the point when men would look at her with desire or admiration, as so many did back in the day. Recently, she'd begun having night sweats, clammy skin, and flushed cheeks. No matter how much she tried to maintain her weight, she seemed only to get lighter. Each woman was astonished by the change in her friend's appearance, tried to hide it, and became sad upon realizing that if



her friend was so changed, she herself must be as well. They had both been the great beauties of their times.

"Where's my daughter?" Silver asked when they had adjusted to each other's presence.

Luna was just finishing up when she heard her mother's footsteps in the hallway. She ran out and threw herself into Silver's arms. Her mother had visited only a handful of times in the past sixteen years, each time complaining of Seoul's strangeness and upholding PyongYang's superiority. That was too little time spent together, and she had been so young when she left home—the same age as Hesook was now. Silver patted her, cooing, "Don't cry, shhh . . . ," but Luna couldn't keep the tears from flowing. In her mother's arms, she again resembled a leopard-like fifteen-year-old girl with a long thick braid that had never been cut.

At breakfast, everyone was in the most cheerful mood, talking in all directions and sharing dishes as families do. Only Lotus looked unwell, with baggy eyes and thinly stretched smiles. A wild and restless air hung about her, but she seemed determined to be on her best behavior for her sister's wedding.

No one was able to actually eat much because of the excitement and anxiety. Afterward, all the women, even the maids, stuffed themselves inside Luna's room to help her dress in her white silk gown. Only Stoney, who had accompanied Silver, waited with his customary quiet attentiveness in the hallway. Silver fixed the jeweled diadem around Luna's forehead and attached the floor-length white veil at the back. Dani returned from the garden with Luna's flowers, dusted with snow.

"Look, cosmoses. They are supposed to die when the first frost comes, but this year they stayed in bloom for you," Dani said. "I always said that this was Luna's flower. So sweet, and stronger than it looks. Didn't I once tell you that a bouquet of cosmoses is more beautiful than any other flower?" She tied the stems together with a string and a sash and placed the bouquet in Luna's soft hands. "It is perfect. Perfect beauty," Dani muttered, and the women around them sniffled and wiped at their eyes.

\* \* \*

**THE HUNDRED STONE STEPS LEADING** up to the cathedral were thinly powdered with snow. JungHo kept his eyes on his feet. The climb, which would have invigorated him in normal circumstances, now only made him feel sullenly that everything in life was both taxing and dangerous. The day before, he had been severely reprimanded by his mentor for the very first time.

Under the tightening noose of surveillance, it had been impossible for MyungBo to go out and meet people. He was simply too prominent in society—even people who were not spying on him intentionally could notice him and spread gossip. So he had asked JungHo to take on the kind of job that was only given to the most trusted and respected members of their organization.

"I need you to go speak to President Ma on behalf of our mission, and win him over as one of our supporters," MyungBo had said, looking deeply into his eyes.

"Aside from his theater and production company, he is also one of only three Korean owners of a chemical factory in the entire country. As one of our biggest issues is securing arms, he could do so much for our cause. But I don't know where his loyalty lies—from our acquaintance years ago, I only know that he is extremely self-possessed, even proud. You must be very careful when you speak to him."

JungHo had nodded and reassured his mentor heartily. He had been trained by MyungBo for years, not just in letters but also in speech, manners, Marx and Lenin, imperialism, the universal rights of human beings, and even a little Japanese. Feeling himself beyond ready, he headed straight to President Ma's mansion.

A few minutes after JungHo rang the bell, a servant opened the gate by just a foot and peered out.

"Scram! We don't need the likes of you around here," the servant said, and then immediately shut the gate. JungHo hadn't had time to say even a word of his carefully rehearsed speech, and his confusion turned to anger as he started abusing the bell. Several more minutes

passed, and then there was the clanking sound of the gate being unlocked once more.

"What the hell are you still doing here? We're not a poorhouse," the servant said, setting aside the door a little wider this time.

"I'm not a beggar." JungHo felt his face burn. "I'm here as a representative of the Honorable Lee MyungBo *sunsengnim*." Calmness and peace returned to him as he said his mentor's name, as if it were an incantation.

"Lee Myung who? We don't know a man by that name in this household." The servant laughed, opening his thin-lipped mouth and revealing a set of grayish teeth. The sight of this loathsome creature disrespecting his mentor was too much for JungHo. All MyungBo's advice and precautions left him in an instant, leaving only blind rage. JungHo grabbed him by the collar like a ragdoll and thrashed him on the ground. Leaving the servant whimpering on the spot, JungHo walked straight into President Ma's study unimpeded. The businessman looked up from his desk in an expression of shock, which turned to utter contempt as JungHo clumsily recited his speech about contributing to their heroic fight for freedom. Even as he spoke, he was painfully aware that it had sounded so much better in his head. The words rushing out of his mouth bore little resemblance to MyungBo's eloquence, and even knowing this he felt unable to stop himself. The only recourse was to get through it.

"Are you finished talking?" President Ma said at the end of JungHo's rambling. From his impassive face, it was hard to tell whether he was moved, frightened, or angered, and JungHo hesitated to speak again. Without waiting for an answer, President Ma picked up his phone and said into the receiver, "Operator, Jongno Police Station please."

JungHo panicked and lunged at the phone, but the older man held on to the receiver with a surprising grip. "You think you can lay a finger on me? Try, you dirty dog. But the police will be here before you can even wipe the blood on your hands."

JungHo had no choice but to run out of the mansion as quickly as possible. His heart pounded like it would leap out of his body, not from the fear of the police but from the humiliation and

disappointment of failing his first big task. Ever since, MyungBo had been on high alert—the police hadn't knocked on their door yet, but it could just be a deliberate delay to gather more evidence. The only thing that gave JungHo a sliver of hope was the fact that he had forgotten to mention MyungBo's name in his speech to President Ma, and the servant was probably too stupid to remember it.

The stairs ended at last, and JungHo stood at the top of the hill in front of the brick edifice soaring into the silvery sky. He looked around briefly at the snow-covered mountains off in the distance, and beneath the stairs, the doll-size neighborhoods and sleepy potager fields. Everything looked peaceful so close to the sky, he thought with a lighter heart. People were cramming into the two side entrances of the cathedral in a garrulous, bustling mood. Without being told, they were reserving the main entrance for the bride. JungHo took one last breath of fresh air and filed behind them.

Inside, the pointed arches ran on either side of the center aisle, weightlessly holding up the stone crown of the church. People were milling about, greeting one another, whispering under the erratic melody of the organist warming up his hands. Because the groom was a foreigner and the bride was formerly one of the best-known courtesans in Seoul, the wedding had caused a sensation in the preceding weeks. Most of the people squeezed into the pews were not invited guests or even parishioners, only curious townspeople. After a few minutes of trying to find Jade and failing, JungHo sat down in the nearest empty spot. With his hands resting on his knees, he watched the soft light streaming in through the windows and hundreds of small candles sighing in the niches.

JungHo never thought about the eternal being that the Catholics called *Haneunim*—Dear Sky. But at moments like these, he could almost understand why they so loved and yearned for their God. The Catholics too had sacrificed their lives for their belief. On the very ground of the cathedral there used to stand the home of the first martyr in Korea, JungHo was once told by one of his comrades. There were certain things worth sacrificing yourself for, JungHo thought, and the faces of Jade and MyungBo shone inside his mind.

He remembered MyungBo saying coldly, "You've endangered not just your life, or my life, but the very fate of our cause. All because you still haven't learned to control your anger. You've disappointed me."

JungHo felt faint with suffering even in recollection. Did MyungBo know how deeply JungHo loved and respected him even in his unspoken thoughts? Did one night of misjudgment erase all the years of selflessly serving him? JungHo now wondered if it had been a mistake trying to be what he wasn't. Perhaps all he was ever good for was a life on the streets.

"JungHo!" He heard a voice, turned around, and saw Jade smiling radiantly.

"I was looking for you. Come with me to the family pew."

He followed her all the way to the front row. She sat down to the right of Dani (who gave him only the slightest, haughtiest nod) and patted the space next to her, making her slight frame even smaller. About twenty feet away from JungHo, the groom was standing by the altar with his hands interlaced together, smiling nervously at the crowd and probably wondering, Who are all these people?

"It is so good of you to come," Jade whispered.

"Of course. She is like a sister to you," JungHo said. He realized in that moment that Jade's lover wasn't there, and he was tempted to ask her "So where's that mechanic of yours?" But when he saw how valiantly Jade was masking her sadness with smiles, he let it go. It was so pitiable, the way she kept discreetly turning around to see if HanChol made it with the last stragglers. JungHo almost wished that he would show up, knowing it would make Jade happy. What wouldn't he endure for her? She was the one witness to his life, someone who saw him and appreciated him.

As the organist began to play, JungHo felt calm and worthy once more. After the wedding, he decided he would go back to MyungBo and humbly ask for forgiveness. JungHo would regain his trust and, in time, his love.

The crowd fell silent and all eyes turned to the entrance, where it suddenly seemed to have become brighter. Even through her veil, the bride was so lovely that she seemed to cast her own light as she

walked up the dark, candlelit nave. All the guests felt a sharp pang in their hearts and many reached for their handkerchiefs. They had not known that a woman's beauty could be so edifying.

"She is like the moon . . . Like her name," Jade whispered, her voice trembling.

JungHo at that moment was the only one who wasn't watching the bride. He was trying to memorize the curve of Jade's forehead and her black eyes, two shimmering wells filled with equal parts of sorrow and joy. He could even study the pair of slender, symmetrical shoulder blades showing through her sweater, which made him think of her skin underneath the layers. It would perhaps stop his heart to stretch his arm along the pew to encircle that beautiful back.

Instead of wrapping his arm around her, he reached into his inside pocket and traced the drawstring pouch with the silver ring. It was still too soon; she loved him, but not as he loved her. He was certain that she would, one day. The knowledge of his own patience strengthened his love and gave him a rush of happiness.

\* \* \*

**THE NATURE OF ALL WEDDINGS** is to throw their guests' relationships into sharp relief against the idyllic happiness of the bride and groom. A wedding ties two people together in love; but how many more people argue, despair, and swear off one another in its wake?

In the week following Luna's ceremony, Jade suffered without fully understanding why. She only had a nagging feeling that something needed to change. She told HanChol to meet her at the Grill at seven o'clock on Saturday night, got there early, and sat by herself in the corner. Half an hour later, HanChol came in through the door, and she forgot all her peevishness.

"You are late," she couldn't help but protest as he sat down next to her.

"I was at the office," he said simply. She admired his elegant fatigue, his well-cut suit worn in from the day, and the wool tie loosening around his collar. She thought about telling him that he looked handsome but decided against it. A waitress came by and

took their orders—a champagne and cream soup for her, and a beer and curry rice for him.

"You missed my sister's wedding," Jade said slowly. She did not want to sound irritable.

"I had to work that day," he said, leaving out that his boss had asked him to tutor his daughter on the side. He had just taught another lesson at their mansion earlier that afternoon. "I'm sorry I couldn't make it. How did it go?"

"She was the most beautiful bride in the world. I heard people gasping when she walked through the door. Of course, they gasped too when they saw a tall, red-haired Yankee at the altar!" Jade giggled.

"She will be well taken care of. It is the best thing that could have happened," HanChol said, sinking into the booth and anchored by exhaustion.

"Yes . . . She had refused him for the longest time but finally realized he is a good man. That's more important than whether he is foreign or not—even her mother said so, and she's very traditional." Jade took a sip of her champagne. "She will go to America and live in those houses that look like churches!"

"That's great. She's a lovely person and I'm very happy to hear that."

The waitress returned with their dishes and they quietly worked on their food for a while. A song came on—one of Lotus's hits that they hadn't heard in years.

"Oh, darling." Jade turned her head toward the gramophone. "I love this song. Can we dance?"

HanChol hesitated for a second. The Grill was not a place where people danced, generally. There were four or five tables of other guests, sedately eating their dinner. Then he saw the starry excitement in Jade's face, stood up, and extended his hand. As she rose she pulled it to her lips and planted a kiss with such natural and unselfconscious affection. Not wanting or expecting anything in return, even a kiss. These gestures were one of the myriad ways in which she was profoundly different from other women. The way she

danced was another. Under the cover of music, he pulled her in as close as possible. He wanted to feel her heartbeat.

"I wish I could be happy too," Jade whispered.

"But you are happy, aren't you? You have everything."

"No, I don't. I don't have your love."

He pulled away from her and looked into her face. "Why would you say that? Of course I love you."

"If you loved me, you would have asked me to marry you a long time ago." Her voice was trembling.

"Please don't talk like this. Not here," he implored, looking at the diners around them.

"If Luna can get married, why can't I?" she blurted out, not from anger, but from confusion and pain. "Are you ashamed of me? Or am I just your toy until you find a suitable bride?"

HanChol's face shut down and became inscrutable, refusing to meet her eyes. "Let's talk outside. I'll get your coat," he said flatly and went to pay the bill.

It was a cold and clear night. The sight of the stars calmed Jade and made her believe that this couldn't really be the end. They would talk it out and, in an hour or two, lie in each other's arms in the warmth of their bed. After HanChol helped her into her coat, she reached for his hand and said, "Walk me home." It was the same road that they'd taken to go home after her performances. They had both been barely older than children, an age when falling in love was as natural as breathing.

They walked for some time, their footsteps crunching on hoarfrost. "Why don't you want to marry me?" Jade asked finally.

"It's not that I don't want to." He sighed. "My family would never allow me to marry someone—someone who . . ."

"An actress? A former courtesan? Someone who is not a virgin daughter of a genteel family?" she said, letting go of his hand. "You know, there are many heirs to great houses who choose to marry for love. These days it's not so unheard of."

Something like a sarcastic laugh came out of HanChol's mouth, imagining his mother's reaction should he bring home a woman who



once had lain with men for a price. What Jade was asking was completely absurd.

"I am my mother's only son and hope. I can't go against her wish," he said tautly.

"If I meant enough to you, you could." She wiped at her eyes. "Do you love someone else?"

"No, of course not." He stopped walking and touched her arm. He did feel sorry then.

"I want you to know—I will never love someone else the way I love you, Jade. You're irreplaceable. You've changed me—my thoughts, my feelings, my whole being—you've made me who I am."

"You've changed me too, darling," she said, trying to hold back the tears. "So? At least be good enough to help me understand. I would run away with you. We could leave everything behind and go somewhere, just the two of us. Why can't we . . . ?"

"Because I'm not ready, Jade. There are things I have to do still . . . And I'm not ready," he repeated, as if hearing it again could convince her and himself. Marriage with any woman was a complex decision, and for him to even consider it at this point it would have to be a spectacular match that would lift him up a few rungs. You only had one shot at improving your station through marriage, and he himself was not high enough to relinquish that chance. This was all better left unsaid, and he hoped she would simply understand, for both of their sakes.

But Jade didn't understand anything except that it was time to let him go. To draw it out, she studied his face in silence. That this was the last time she would be seeing him caused her agonizing pain.

"This was the way we took to walk home from the theater. Hundreds of times. Do you remember that spring? It was more than six years ago now. We've spent so much time together." She smiled, and a tear loosened from her eye.

"I know. I could never forget our walks—my first true memory of happiness. Every minute I've been with you, I've been so happy."

"So have I," she said, and he gathered her frozen hands in his and pressed them to his lips.

"You will become the most successful man in Seoul, I'm sure of it. It will only bring me the greatest happiness to know of your good fortune. When that happens, just remember that I believed in you before anyone else," she continued. "I will walk home alone the rest of the way. Goodbye."

"Let me at least see you home safely."

"No, we've had our talk. It all has to end at some point. Goodbye," she said again, and began walking resolutely toward the horizon where the black sky met the white earth.

## 20

### The Dreamers

1937

**EVERYONE DREAMS, BUT ONLY SOME PEOPLE ARE DREAMERS. THE NON-DREAMERS**, by far more numerous, are those who see the world as it is. Then there are the few dreamers, who see the world as *they* are. The moon, the river, the train station, the sound of rain, and even something as mundane as porridge become something else with many layers. The world feels like an oil painting rather than a photograph, and the dreamers are forever seeing hidden colors where others just see the top shade. The nondreamers look through glasses, and the dreamers through a prism.

This is not a quality determined by intelligence or passion, two things most often conflated with dreaming. Dani, the most intelligent and passionate person Jade had ever known, had a vision that was as crisp and sharply outlined as her mannerisms and principles. Dani was not interested in the unfathomable when there were wrongs to be righted, preferably with utmost grace and aplomb. When Jade stopped dancing and acting, she felt as if all the colors had gone out of her life. She was now in the world of the nondreamers, a strange and suffocating place, and felt lonelier than she'd ever been; but Dani acted as though she just had to accept reality and move on.

"It's the depression," Dani said one morning, poring over her newspaper through her magnifying glass. "People don't have money to spend at movie theaters. Many restaurants are closing now, too. You can't be too hard on yourself."

"But, Auntie, you know *Hong GilDong* just came out and it's a hit. And last fall, the remake of *One Lucky Day*. It's been only six years since the original, did they have to make a new one already?" Jade said, picking at her breakfast of pine nut porridge. "It sold out every night for almost six months."

"That's because it's a talkie. People are mad for anything new. Your studio should have foreseen that. Can't you talk to them?"

Dani folded her newspaper in half and looked up at Jade as though nothing could be simpler. Despite the trauma of her arrest and her heartbreaks, Dani didn't understand defeat. To her, failure was like stockings with holes: it could happen to anyone, but if you allowed it to show in public then you were to blame. Taking care to contain and discard your failures was as much a matter of good manners as high principles. It was a kind of cool, aristocratic sensibility that made Dani a better role model than a friend. So Jade hadn't been able to talk about her studio's bankruptcy or her dwindling savings at thirty, the precise age at which she was supposed to be wealthy and independent, because her value as a woman had reached its logical expiration.

The only person who would understand her predicament was Lotus. Even though they hadn't seen each other in months, Jade was certain that her friend would make her feel better. They would laugh about the old days, their girlhood dreams of becoming celebrated courtesans, the many handsome and rich lovers they were each supposed to have by this age. She even felt that they could take this moment of vulnerability to renew their friendship and plot out the future, whatever that may be. For all her faults, Lotus had always had an inspiring appetite for life. Whereas others thought of the world as a vast insidious sea or some such field of battle, Lotus took the approach that it was all just a game or a basket of fruits—to be played and to be tasted. That was her virtue—and she often had the effect of transferring her attitude to

whoever was around her. Her thoughts thus gathered, Jade put on her hat and started walking toward Lotus's house.

It was a lovely day, hot in the sun and cool in the shade, and she strolled on the road half dappled with shadows of the storefronts. People were ambling along, students were just getting out of school and flocking to the sweets shop. Delivery men whipped past on their bicycles. Light danced off the glass windows of the department store, and pasted on its walls were posters for new talkie films and singers. There were tables displayed outside the bookstore and she stopped here to leaf through the titles. These were mostly novels and periodicals, and in one literary magazine she found some names she knew from Café Seahorn. She flipped to a random page and found an illustration by the painter in the crimson velvet dress. It was not a drawing of women's liberation and free love, which she was known for, but a painting of a little girl wearing a yellow headband, entitled *Daughter*. Jade closed the magazine and kept walking.

When she reached Lotus's house, an unfamiliar housekeeper answered the door.

"Is your mistress home?" Jade asked.

"She hasn't been home for the past three days," the old woman replied grudgingly, as though Jade had asked the most inconvenient question.

"What do you mean, she hasn't been home?" Jade frowned, walking in without being told. Looking around her and calling for her friend, she opened Lotus's bedroom door. A faint ambiguous smell that she'd first detected in the hallway rushed over her like a wave. The room was empty, but that odor—floral and musky like young girls' clothes just taken off, still warm with body heat—reminded Jade of the last time she'd visited Lotus. It had been a warm spring day, but Lotus had insisted on staying under a thick winter comforter as they talked.

"I want to go out somewhere fun, like we used to in the old days," Lotus had said then. "But not today. Today I feel tired."

"Okay, we'll go out as soon as you feel better, I promise," Jade had said, and Lotus smiled and grasped her hand. More than

anything else, it was that lopsided smile that broke Jade's heart. Lotus had grinned so much as a child, even while her mother and older sister treated her with disdain. There had been beauty in her innocence—Jade could only recognize that now, as a woman.

The housekeeper was waiting for her in the hallway with a look of annoyance. Jade suppressed the urge to yell and said as calmly as possible, "Did she say where she was going?"

"Not a clue, miss." The old woman shrugged. "She wasn't in her right mind for a while, as you know."

Jade blushed and choked down the anger that was directed toward the housekeeper, but was really meant for herself. Had she really been so blind to how badly her friend had become addicted to opium? It was a common vice, almost as common as drink and tobacco. The most fashionable men and women and the most admired artists made a ritual of visiting the dream world once or twice a week. But the majority of them also didn't spend their days lying on their cots, wasting away until they were old and weak before their time. It sickened Jade that she had made excuses for Lotus instead of confronting her—simply because she'd had enough problems of her own.

Jade returned to Lotus's room, hoping to find any hints of her whereabouts. Some of the furniture Jade remembered seeing had been removed, but in the corner above the sideboard, there was a telephone. She picked it up, hesitated for a second, and said, "Operator, President Ma of the Grand Oriental Cinema, please."

There was a pause as the operator put her through, and Jade felt her heart beat fast. She had never spoken directly to this man, whom Lotus had described with so much infatuation, then possessiveness, and finally, hatred. There was a clicking sound and a male voice answered, "Hello?"

"President Ma. This is Jade Anh—Lotus's friend," she said. The silence that followed lasted only a few seconds, but felt much longer and colder.

"Yes, of course," he said at last. "How can I help you?"

"I've just come by Lotus's house, and she's not here . . . The housekeeper tells me she hasn't been home in the past three days."

President Ma cleared his throat. "Yes, I heard," he said, and his indifference snapped Jade's self-restraint.

"Aren't you worried about her? Are you even looking for her—and what about Sunmi?" she said, noticing as she spoke the child's absence in the silent house.

"Sunmi is with me. She'll be going to school in Japan in a couple of weeks." His voice was not angry, just contemptuous. "If you're as close a friend as you pretend to be, you'd know that Lotus has always been a terrible mother. Even in the best of times she was not fit to be raising my daughter. Now she's half out of her mind."

A nauseating thought came into Jade's head. "Did you make Lotus leave?"

President Ma laughed mirthlessly. "Can anyone really force another person to leave or stay? But she certainly can't come back."

Jade hung up, shivering. The housekeeper was standing by the door, not even hiding the fact that she was eavesdropping. Her face was lit up in the smug smile of servants who discover their employers' vulgarity.

"Just yesterday, he told me to get the house ready for a new mistress. He's ordered new furniture for her too. She's young, and he thinks she'll give him a son. It is shameful, even for a man like that." The housekeeper clucked her tongue.

"Never mind about the new woman. She doesn't concern me," Jade snapped. The old woman glared at her and then shook her head, swinging her loose jowl side to side.

"It serves you courtesans right to be abandoned—stealing other women's husbands for a living," she sneered darkly as Jade walked out the gates.

**JADE BEGAN HER SEARCH** in the very first place she and Lotus had been in Seoul—the train station—and made her way through all the landmarks of their shared lives, from MyungWol to the Joseon Theatre. She inquired with the staff at each place, but no one could remember seeing Lotus recently. Standing awkwardly outside the theater, she watched the matinee goers leave in groups of three and four, and recalled how Lotus had pleaded to go out and have fun

when they last saw each other. She ran as fast as she could to Café Seahorn.

It was already past six thirty when she arrived at the café. Even under the circumstances, she was enveloped by the comfort of its familiar decadence, the intimate air of everyone knowing everyone. But the café had changed since Japan began clamping down harder in the peninsula, spurred by its conquest of vast Manchuria. The guests were whispering in subdued voices, and even the music sounded softer. Jade remembered her first visit to the café, when she'd marveled at the crystal ashtrays on every table. "Aren't these a little too fine to be left around like this?" she had asked the poet-owner. He had answered cheerfully, tapping his cigarette smartly on the side of an ashtray: "Why, Miss Jade, that's what true luxury is—using fine things in a casual way." Those ashtrays were now gone. But more changed than all those things was Jade herself, with her tired skin and unfashionable clothes.

There were only a few women in the café, and it didn't take long for her to realize that Lotus was not among them. She felt the energy give out from the back of her knees; she'd walked everywhere in Seoul for a good seven hours. She collapsed onto the nearest booth and folded her head over her arms. Warm tears were prickling her eyes, as much from missing her friend as from the fatigue. I'm not going to break down. Not here, she thought, taking a deep breath. Raising her head, she spotted the poet-owner across the room, weaving through the blur of the blinking candles. She waved at him, but he didn't see her. He slid into a booth, which was curious, Jade thought. Although he often chatted and danced with his guests, he never sat with them. His face was turned toward Jade, and the one guest at the booth—a man—was facing the opposite way. The poet-owner was sinking deep into his seat with his hands down, and she realized that he was passing something to the man under the table. They appeared to chat for a few more minutes, then the guest rose. As he turned around to head for the exit, his eyes met Jade's and she inwardly staggered in recognition. It was JungHo.



"I didn't expect to see you here," Jade said as he sat down next to her and she clasped her hands around his.

"The owner is a friend of mine . . . Are you okay?" JungHo replied, deliberately changing the subject.

"As a matter of fact, I'm not," Jade said, her panic finally rushing out in his presence. "Lotus is gone. She's been missing for three days. I went everywhere looking for her."

"Hey, slow down. Everything is going to be okay," JungHo said, rising. "Let's get out of here. We can talk while looking for her."

Jade explained from the beginning: how cruel and indifferent the housekeeper had been, how President Ma was already preparing the house for his new mistress (JungHo blushed a little upon hearing Ma's name, but listened without interjecting). Most terrifying of all was the fact that Lotus was out wandering Seoul with little money and even less presence of mind, without having told any of her friends.

"She's really gotten herself in a bad way," JungHo said when they'd been walking in silence for a while.

"I knew for a long time, but a lot of people do it," Jade replied, feeling calmer in JungHo's presence. The sun was sending its last rays through the breaks in the buildings. There was a sense that all visible things in the world were the shadows of a truth, which radiated out only through the chinks. "Without alcohol or opium, how would they cope? There'd be even more suicides than now," she said, thinking of the deaths that had become as common as a cold. "Sometimes people just seem to get up one morning, have breakfast, and decide to hang themselves."

JungHo stopped walking and turned to her. "Hey, don't talk like that," he said, a bit roughly. She felt offended until he resumed walking and added:

"I've been within an inch of death countless times in my life. Do you know what happens then? You can actually feel it physically. Sometimes it's like a heavy blanket, when you've been starving and there's not an ounce of strength left in you. Sometimes it's like a dog, lurking in the corner and ready to attack." He squinted his eyes at the sun's last outburst.

"Each time, I knew it would be easier and less painful if I just let it take me. No one is holding their breath wishing me a long life, you know? And each time, at the last moment, do you know what happens?" he asked. Jade shook her head, frightened.

"You get one, clear chance at giving into it, or refusing. And I've said No every time. I don't know why—but the more reasons I have to die, the less I want to give in," he said. "Even when the sky is falling down, even when no one will miss you, life is still better than death."

It was Jade's turn to stop and stare at him. "I wish you'd stop saying that no one cares if you die. What am I, then?"

"If you care, that matters more than everyone else in the world combined. I just might never die!" He chuckled, and she laughed with him, feeling at ease for the first time in a long while.

"Hey, I almost forgot," Jade said, nudging his ribs. "What were you doing in there?"

"What do you mean?" He shrugged. "Now and then, I like to have coffee."

"Don't even *try*, JungHo." She snorted. "You think you can lie to me? To *me*?" She poked playfully at his side again—then stopped walking, seeing his changing expression. JungHo looked around; once he was sure they weren't being watched, he opened his jacket just an inch to reveal the muzzle of a revolver. She blushed, realizing with a start that she had been elbowing the gun.

"Was that what he gave you under the table?" Jade whispered as they started walking again. He nodded.

"A Japanese officer got too drunk one night and left it behind. It's been harder and harder to source weapons within the country—every single gun counts," JungHo said softly. It had never been very clear to Jade what he did; she knew this was to protect both of them. But just then, under the fresh darkness of the sundown, she felt his urgency to share a little of his secrets before it became too late.

"With the crackdown getting worse, we don't know how much longer we can keep up the resistance, at least in the peninsula itself. It's frustrating. I wish I could be of greater service than being the

delivery man . . . But for that I would have to read and write better, and speak some Chinese besides. No matter how hard I try, my mentor doesn't think I'm ready." He bit his lips in bitter disappointment. Jade didn't know how to comfort him, so she reached out and patted his arm. That seemed to soothe him, as always.

"I thought the owner was just a dandy," she said after a long pause. "Soft hands, pretty hair."

"People are brave in different ways, Jade."

Because it had been such a nice, sunny day, it stayed balmy even as the darkness ripened. Many young lovers were promenading on the boulevard, and the shops played their SP records outside so that passersby could join in. Soft, hazy, nocturnal noises—laughter, a car engine, a dog barking—broke through the calm surface of silence, like muffled voices behind a drawn curtain onstage. Jade breathed in deeply the mixture of sounds and the smell of lilac. Everywhere around them, life was happening without their knowing, and their lives were also happening in the presence of all else. All existences were touching lightly as air and leaving invisible fingerprints.

"It's too dark now," she said softly.

"Let's get you home. But we'll find her soon, Jade. I go everywhere in the city, and know many people besides. I'll find her for you."

They turned a corner and headed in the direction of Jade's house. Somewhere nearby a record was playing and grew louder as they approached. A crowd of a few dozen people were standing in front of the record store, singing along to the latest hit. The SP had a vellum quality that caressed the atmosphere. The rounded plucking of the double bass was like rain pattering on water.

"It's 'Manchu Tango,'" Jade told him. "It wasn't going to pass censorship with that title though, so they changed it to 'Mandu Tango.' But everyone knows it's really about moving to Manchuria and missing home. Apparently the activists in the north took it up as their anthem." The crowd was changing mandu to Manchu in the refrain, and young couples were discreetly swaying side by side with their hands intertwined.

JungHo turned to her and held out his hand. "Would you like to dance?" He had a nervous twinkle in his eyes. The crisp crease of his pants, the carefully combed hair—all the effort he made, principally, for her—made her wish she liked him that way.

"We can't, we'll get arrested." She smiled in apology. Ballroom dancing was officially illegal, and although everyone knew that people danced in cafés and secret clubs, doing so on the streets was out of the question.

"It's so dark and no one will notice," JungHo said, hand still outstretched. He appeared determined but just under the surface she knew he was terrified of embarrassing himself. Even the darkness of the night and his own permanent tan couldn't hide the redness rising to his cheeks. She took his right hand with her left, then they stood both facing the gramophone and rocked side to side.

Jade closed her eyes. JungHo's hand locked around her own was hot and clammy. She tried to imagine that it was HanChol's hand that she was holding, but nothing about their hands was alike. HanChol's had been well shaped with long and sturdy fingers and she'd loved even the greenish veins that stood up under the skin. But more than their appearance it was the touch that revealed all their differences. The older courtesans used to joke that men were indistinguishable once you blew out the candle. In reality, when you stopped looking at their expressions and hearing their words and focused simply on how they felt, you perceived their disparity more keenly. If love was just the deepest shade of friendship, so deep as to look like a distinct color but actually on the same spectrum of loyalty, then she loved JungHo. So much. But if it was something else altogether, then she did not.

The calm fabric of the night was torn by a sound like an approaching thunderstorm. But the moon was still visible in the blue-black sky—it was the roar of engines that buried the music. People stopped singing and watched as army trucks rolled by, flying the Japanese flag on their hoods and carrying soldiers in the back. Suddenly, people were murmuring among themselves: "Japan is attacking Beijing. It's finally happening."

"China gave up Manchuria, but it will rouse itself for its mainland."

"They've woken up the sleeping giant."

"Shh, the birds and the mice have ears. Watch what you say."

"It was bad enough as it is . . . A full-out war and we'll likely all get killed."

"What's going on?" Jade asked, rapidly being pulled out of her dream world by the noises rushing around her. JungHo was saying something but his words were being drowned by the sirens. The yellow headlights of the trucks glared into her face and she closed her eyes once more. The only thing she felt sure of was the firm grip of JungHo's hand, not letting go.

## **Part III**

**1941–1948**

# 21

## Purple Shadows

1941

**WHEN JUNGHO ARRIVED AT THE BACK GATE OF THE OLD CHINESE RESTAURANT,** an unfamiliar guard with a shaved head was posted outside.

"Password," the guard said, crossing his arms over his vast chest. JungHo paused; he hadn't heard that there was a new door policy.

"Nam JungHo," he said at last.

"Ah, *oyabun*!" The numbskull—as JungHo called him in his mind—snapped to attention and bowed deeply from the waist. "Please forgive my ignorance!" He opened the door as wide as the hinges would allow, and the shorter man passed through.

The courtyard was unrecognizable from his boyhood years. The chestnut tree in the center had been cut down and YoungGu's dog that had been tied to it had also died long ago. The disappearance of its howls and yelps left a strangely lasting void in the air, like a place on the wall where an old frame has been removed.

JungHo felt a sharp pang at this, more than he felt at the death of many humans—both the ones that had nothing to do with him, and others for whom he'd played a crucial role in speeding up the mortal process. He would not, would never, become a habitual killer;

but he'd long believed that with the exception of very few individuals there was no one who was truly good and honorable. They lied, cheated, betrayed their friends, family, and country—then doubled back, then doubled back again, just to save their skins. When the government-general decreed that all Koreans had to change their names to Japanese ones, half the country had immediately lined up to cast aside what their parents and their forebears had passed down. They believed in nothing, he thought, if they could give up their own names so easily. His contempt for humanity was becoming more pronounced as the years went on, and even made him value his own life less. He took a deep breath to clear this thought; there was a side of him still that wanted to hold on to his little remaining innocence.

The courtyard was filled with people waiting in silence to barter their gold and jewels. At the top of the queue, YoungGu was seated in a booth, flanked by a guard on each side and receiving the supplicants one at a time. He had stopped running the restaurant when the war broke out and started buying goods from the provinces and selling them for an unspeakable price in Seoul. The army had long ago confiscated all the valuables they could, but somehow the heirlooms kept surfacing from inside silk-filled comforters and jars hidden under wooden floors. Once those ran out, desperate people brought land deeds and promises of repayment with staggering interest—JungHo knew this part without being told.

With a hand over his heart, YoungGu insisted to JungHo that he didn't do any of this for money. It was something that had to be done, and it was better done by him, a man of the people, was it not? Nonetheless, he took to the black market business wholeheartedly, the way some people enjoy themselves and become more sharply alive during crises—those ambiguous spaces between clear life and death. To chaos, they reacted with a kind of meaningless sanguinity, unlike those limp-wristed intellectuals who lost their desire to keep on living. What other alternatives there were to these two modes, JungHo did not know. He noticed that YoungGu



looked happier than in the early years of his marriage when the children were small and the restaurant was thriving.

Upon catching sight of JungHo, YoungGu waved away his subordinates, rose, and walked briskly toward him with open arms. He had lost some weight around his middle since the start of the war, but in a way that made him look younger and healthier. He was wearing a brown corduroy waistcoat over a clean cotton shirt and trousers, like a well-to-do pharmacist receiving helpless patients.

"Why did that numbskull at the gate call me *oyabun*?" JungHo said, once they'd finished trading their usual greetings. "This isn't the yakuza." He frowned.

"Sorry, Chief, he really is stupid," YoungGu said, leading the way to a back storage where he kept the most precious goods for his friends.

"But you'll be happy to see what I set aside for you. One sack each of barley and potatoes, two heads of cabbage, and a bag of little, dried anchovies. You couldn't buy these nowadays even with money stacked from floor to ceiling . . . No, stop, put that away," he said, shaking his head firmly and deflecting JungHo's hand.

JungHo frowned, although not out of displeasure this time. "I can't just take this—even if we're old friends. When I went to see Loach for rice a fortnight ago, he did end up accepting some silver from me."

The fact was that when JungHo offered some of MyungBo's silver to his closest friend, he had expected it would be refused. Instead, Loach took it, recorded the transaction in his book, and then turned to talking about some other unrelated subject without any embarrassment. They both knew that Loach was hardly struggling—he was getting as many valuables and deeds as he could ever want in a lifetime. JungHo had acted as if nothing was wrong and left with a friendly handshake, but inside he'd made up his mind to never see Loach again.

YoungGu snorted. "Of course Loach took it, that selfish bastard. But remember how many times when we each had nothing but a pair of balls, you gave us your food? Remember how many times you gave me a little bit more from your bowl so I could share with

my dog?" YoungGu kept smiling widely but his eyes were rather moist. "I will never forget that."

JungHo was relieved to see that his friend's generosity was real. He wrapped his arm around YoungGu's shoulder and slapped it heartily a few times. "Yes, thank you. Of course I remember, I remember," he said, regretting his earlier thought about the worthlessness of most people. It was not in his nature to stay coldhearted for a long time, even in a war.

"I'll walk you out, Chief," YoungGu said as they went back through the bustling courtyard. "It's so hot already, and summer has only just begun . . . Why, what's the matter?"

JungHo had stopped walking. In the middle of the queue, his eyes had found a man he knew better than he would care to admit. With his factory worker's shirt and pants, and somewhat more filled-out shape, HanChol had no trace left of the raw intensity of a penniless graduate. Even in the midst of war, he had the strapping look of a man ideally poised between youth and maturity, past accomplishments and future ambition. JungHo had heard that he had opened up an auto repair shop and was skillfully expanding the business even as the whole country fared like a paper boat in a hurricane. Nonetheless, he wasn't so successful that he could avoid coming to beg for food from YoungGu—JungHo thought with some satisfaction. He realized that this was his moment of revenge, a chance vindication that happens only once in people's lives. It was about three o'clock in the afternoon, an in-between time of day, and dead leaves were rustling on the sand where the dog used to lie in the sun. JungHo unconsciously took in these details so that he could recollect later the precise moment at which he felt the happiness of humiliating someone who had deeply humiliated him in the past. His ears drummed with blood and all of his veins were humming, from fingertips to toes. It was one of the most pleasant sensations he'd ever experienced.

"Do you know that guy?" YoungGu asked.

"It's a long story but he's a real"—JungHo searched for the right word—"coward. Yes, that's what he is," he said, satisfied that even MyungBo couldn't say he wasn't being fair.

"I'll make him leave right now. Or beat him to death, whatever you prefer." As the words left YoungGu's lips, five or six of his underlings filed behind them automatically, clenching their knuckles and cracking their necks.

"No, I'll take care of him myself," JungHo said, walking up to the queue with balled-up fists. The crowd instinctively quieted down and lassoed their attention on the two men. JungHo's recognition wasn't returned; in a gesture of mild suspicion, HanChol narrowed his dumb eyes that women inexplicably liked so much.

"You're Mr. Kim HanChol?" JungHo asked, without bowing or offering his hand. "I'm Nam JungHo. You may not know me, but we both know Jade Ahn."

HanChol's face was transformed at the mention of her name, as if it were an antidote that turned arrogance to sorrow. "I have heard of you. Jade used to tell me you were one of her closest friends," he said, casting his eyes low.

"Did she?" JungHo wondered, more to himself. He flushed a little imagining what they'd said about him, but he brushed this aside.

"She told me about you as well, Mr. Kim HanChol. You were not a good friend to her."

JungHo saw with satisfaction how his enemy's face paled and lost its self-absorbed equanimity. So that was his weakness—the need to *appear* to be right. HanChol was the kind of man who could convince himself that he had always done the best he could. JungHo knew that this look of sorrow was just one way he protected his own self-regard. The best revenge against HanChol would be shaking his conceit, and that wasn't going to happen just by pummeling him with fists.

"The likes of you don't deserve to breathe the same air she breathes. Never, ever appear in front of her again, you hear me?" JungHo snarled, taking a step closer to his rival and barely resisting the urge to spit on the ground. HanChol hadn't moved an inch all the while, like a lizard that has sensed a predator and decides to play dead until the danger passes. He did not look so fine now—only cowardly, just as JungHo intuited. If only Jade knew!

"Boys, make sure Mr. Kim HanChol here gets whatever he needs," he said, turning around. YoungGu snapped to attention and sent his underlings off in all directions in search of food.

"And don't accept any payment from him."

He knew without looking that HanChol, with his tiresome nobleman's rules, was humiliated by having to accept the generosity of someone who clearly despised him. And no matter what happened in the past, ultimately it was he, JungHo, who was going to see her this evening. She needed *him*. The pleasure of revenge was so great that he felt as though he were a furious star, aligned perfectly in a constellation.

\* \* \*

**JUNGHO MANAGED TO BARTER THREE** of YoungGu's potatoes for a yellow melon on the way to Jade's house. He had hardly finished knocking when she appeared and opened the gate for him. She accepted the heavy linen bag from him with both hands, opened it, and gasped.

"Barley, potatoes, anchovies . . . And what's this? A *chameh* melon! I feel like I'm looking at a mirage. JungHo, what would I do without you?" she said, ushering him inside.

"I only wish there's something more I can do. How is Aunt Dani?" he asked, taking off his fedora.

"She's still struggling with fever. I think it's the shock from the raids, and this steamy weather isn't helping, either. She hasn't had much to eat in months and has lost too much weight." Jade blushed. She herself had become gaunt, and there were dusk-like shadows under her cheekbones that he hadn't seen before.

"Did they take everything?" The police had been raiding people's homes to collect not just rice and jewelry, but also metal pots, pans, clothing irons, furnaces, fire pokers, and the like. Without discrimination they were all melted down and remade into artillery, ships, and airplanes.

"Almost. In the garden, I dug a hole under the cherry tree and buried a few of our most expensive jewelry. But what use is a

diamond necklace or a gold comb when the rice is half mixed with sand and there's nothing to eat?"

"Jade, don't tell even me where your secret hiding place is! Be careful around your neighbors and friends. That's just for you and Aunt Dani to know." JungHo berated her, and a sweet smile warmed her face.

"But, JungHo, you *are* my family. You've been bringing us good rice for months. I trust you." She grinned, and little crinkles appeared under her eyes. It made her look her age—she was thirty-three, and more than twenty years had passed since he first saw her. And yet he thought she looked beautiful now in her waning, perhaps even more so than when she was a young courtesan in full bloom. Even the shadows on her face drew him in.

"Just hang in there. This can't last forever. Japan greatly underestimated how big a country China is. The world has turned its back on them after what happened in Nanjing. Rape, fire, killing pregnant women . . . What they did to us, they now do to the Chinese. Our Independence Army and the Chinese troops have already joined forces in Manchuria. My mentor says Japan cannot win this war," he said. Jade nodded firmly, as if her assent would help that prediction come to pass.

"Actually, that's what I came to tell you." He took his hat by the brim and turned it around in a circle. The air in the room was heavy, like a fourth drink. The second hand of the clock ticked away the silence to the beating of his heart.

"I was chosen to go to Shanghai on a mission," he said, almost like an afterthought. But it was hard—much harder than he'd anticipated—to feign nonchalance.

Among the many things he'd never learned how to do, letting go was the most difficult. But he resolved to do what he'd always done: act first and think later. To gain courage, he raised the heels of his hands and pressed them into his eyes a few times.

"I'm not going to be back for many months," he said. They both heard more clearly what was *not* being said—that he was likely not going to come back at all. A mutual understanding overtook them. The ticking of the clock slowed and then disappeared into oblivion,

and JungHo felt satisfied that sitting here together in sorrow was the just compensation for all his years of waiting. It was hot and humid and death lingered in the dark corners of the room like purple shadows of a long summer sun.

"I'd been waiting for years for my mentor to entrust me with a mission," he said with a faint smile. "But now that the time has come, I feel a little—a bit sad."

"Oh JungHo, I'm so worried for you," Jade said, discreetly sponging her eyes with a finger. She was determined to seem brave, so JungHo pretended not to notice.

"You have been my only friend these past years, with Luna in America and Lotus missing . . . I don't know what I'll do when you're gone." She sighed, then rushed to the kitchen, shouting, "Will you at least stay for dinner? I will cook something."

JungHo stayed in the sitting room while Jade busied herself with preparing the barley he'd brought. Dani was sleeping, so she left a bowl of porridge next to her cot before setting the table for JungHo and herself. The soldiers had taken away Dani's polished bronze bowls, spoons, and chopsticks, so Jade had to make do with wooden bowls and utensils that not even her maids would have used before the war. Watching her fuss over the dishes, JungHo imagined that they were married and that this was just one of their ordinary meals in their ordinary lives. The fantasy was so pleasant that he couldn't help but say it aloud.

"Jade, it's as though you're my wife fixing me dinner." The moment he heard the words, he was terrified of repulsing her. But surprisingly, she smiled.

"It's hard being a bachelor. A man needs a woman's touch." She crinkled her eyes, pushing a bowl of radish kimchi closer to him. "Eat."

They chewed slowly to prolong the light dinner, talking of the war and Dani's illness.

"One of our comrades is a doctor. Before I leave, I'll drop by his clinic and ask him to visit Aunt Dani," he said, putting down his spoon.

"All I ever do is cause you trouble and ask for help." Jade knit her brows. "I've done nothing for you."

"There was never any need for you to do something for me," he said with a shy smile. That was the truth. At some indiscernible point—years ago already—JungHo had given up the idea that she could love him the way he loved her. It had happened without him even realizing, which was probably for the best. He'd made all the most important turns in his life based on a wish that was long gone, but to go back was impossible. And what good would it do to deny his past? Somewhere inside him flickered the intuition that this happened to all people to varying degrees, and that helped him make peace with his lot. But what she said next blew apart that peace with the force of a summer storm.

"Would you like to spend the night?" she asked.

\* \* \*

**SHE WOKE UP WITH** his arms tightly wound around her body. Even deep in sleep, he didn't seem to want to let her go. There was a trace of a smile on his lips.

Had this been HanChol, she would have stroked his hair and kissed him in his sleep. With JungHo, she had only the deep desire to be alone again. She didn't regret asking him to spend the night. It was right that she should give what meant so much to him, which cost her so little. And yet, she felt so uncomfortable in his arms that her best efforts to stay still were in vain.

"You're awake already," JungHo whispered through half-closed lids.

"Keep sleeping. I'll fix some breakfast." She started to rise, but he pulled her back.

"I'd rather hold you a bit longer. And I want to talk to you."

She was even more uncomfortable now that the room was becoming lighter and she was still naked next to him, but she stayed.

"Jade, you know how I feel about you," he began, his eyes now wide. "I have loved you for a very long time. More than you know."

Do you remember the day when you were in a parade, all dressed up in costume? That's when I first saw you. Even then, as young as I was, I felt like my life would change."

Jade did remember the parade, but of course had no recollection of seeing JungHo among the hundreds of spectators.

"After Dani told me to stay away and we lost touch, I used to look for you everywhere I went. When you were going to the cinema with Lotus, my eyes found you in the crowd like the sun was only shining on you." JungHo's face was suffused with that imagined light from so many years ago.

"How bizarre! Why, out of all the people you see in Seoul."

"I know . . ." JungHo smiled. "I would just spot the most beautiful girl, and then realize a second later that she's the same one as before." He took her cheek tenderly in his palm and she tried her best to enjoy it.

"You know, my favorite color is blue," he said with a distant look in his eyes, as though trying to recall a long-lost memory.

"I always loved looking at the sky, ever since I was little. So blue things just catch my eye—whether it's a tie, or a woman's dress. The way I kept noticing you, loving you, it's because you're my blue." He looked at her shyly, as if relieved and proud that he'd shared this thought with her.

Jade was touched, but also troubled by the unmentionable fact that *he* was not her blue. There was only one man who was her blue, and he no longer loved her and wanted nothing to do with her. She wished with all her heart that JungHo would stop talking.

"You're the only reason for everything I've done in my life," he said, turning over onto his right side to face her. "Jade, listen carefully. I'm going to tell my mentor that I can't go on the mission. Before, I had no reason not to go . . . But now, I want to stay here and have a life with you." He interlaced his hand with hers and squeezed.

Jade's heart started racing and her cheeks tingled with a current of overwhelm. "But you've already promised him. How can you go back on your word?" she asked, pulling imperceptibly away from him.



JungHo widened his eyes, and said in an eager voice meant to reassure her: "Comrade Lee is the most compassionate, humane person I know. He's never stopped anyone from leaving, for any reason. He has never acted as if he owns me."

She breathed slowly, struggling to contain the cruelty of her own words. But when she relaxed her grip, they rushed out of her mouth like hounds. "But the mission is bigger than any one of us."

She had no time to reflect on her words before they escaped, so they felt like mere meaningless sounds at first. But she realized their full horror as JungHo's loving face turned to stone. It wasn't just that he was very still and cold—what she'd found endearing about him, recognizably and uniquely JungHo ever since they were little, was extinguished at once with her utterance.

"After everything I've done for you," he said with difficulty. Jade saw before her eyes their life together: JungHo shouting at her to jump from the tree so he could catch her; flying out of her house to find a midwife for Luna; holding hands with her the night the war began; standing at the gates with sacks of food when all hope seemed to be lost, so much so that sometimes it felt like all she needed to do to summon him was look at the door. He was also seeing these memories in his mind, she realized—and the more he saw, the more he despaired.

"And I would have done even more—given up everything—to keep you safe." His darkly burning eyes made her struggle not to flinch.

"That's not what I meant to say. Of course I want you to stay," she said, so weakly that even she had trouble believing herself.

He said nothing; he seemed to have finally realized that he had spent his life loving someone so unworthy. He rose and dressed in silence, his face contorted with hatred. Then just before reaching her door, he turned back.

What happened next made her see who he really was for the first time—someone she'd only guessed at from his mysterious occupation. JungHo lunged toward her. Too terrified to cry out, she cradled her head in her arms and cowered, but his body flew by her. He fell onto the cot, attacking it like a madman. When the cot

seemed dead enough, he grabbed the nearest object—a hand mirror—and hurled it at the wall, where it exploded into pieces. Ignoring the glistening shards of glass spraying over them, he buried his head in the comforter and screamed—just a sharp monosyllable, an inhuman howl. Thus spent, he lay prostrate, panting, his back rising and falling with his breath.

Jade felt herself sobbing, because his body looked so familiar and yet so alien to her. It was as if something invisible that had constellated them together since childhood had been severed, and she could no longer reach him even while sitting just an arm's length apart. She wanted to find a way to calm him, to make him understand how much he *did* mean to her. But before she could say anything, he pressed himself up to kneeling and with his head still bowed, exhaled deeply. There was no trace of violent rage left in him, just starry flecks of mirror clinging to his clothes and hair. A few more minutes passed in silence. When he finally lifted his head, she saw that his expression was cold and determined. Only his eyes were unusually bright and full like melted snow.

He stood up and put on his hat in the manner of someone leaving the funeral of a distant connection—dryly somber with an air of finality.

"I said to you once that no one would care if I died. Remember how you said *you* would?" Without waiting for her to reply, he dipped his hat and walked out of her house for the very last time.

\* \* \*

**IN JULY, MAJOR GENERAL YAMADA** came home on leave from the campaign in China. His wife, Mineko, greeted him coldly. Though she'd begun their marriage in innocence and good faith, she'd become disappointed, then tired, then enraged by his complete lack of presence. She was barely moved to see him considerably aged. There were now deep grooves on his once-elegant forehead. He'd lost two fingers on his right hand, which he kept encased in a glove even in the sweltering heat. She might have felt pity for a stranger

wounded in battle, but not for her husband, who had dedicated his entire life to war and conquest.

The morning after his arrival, Mineko sat down to tea with her husband and asked for a divorce. She was three months pregnant, she explained. If he would be decent enough to set her free, she would marry her lover and move back to Japan.

Yamada didn't say anything, not because he was angry or indignant but because he'd lost the desire to speak. He stared at Mineko, who was in a pink dress similar to the one she'd worn at their first meeting. It occurred to him then that they had been married sixteen years and were still strangers at heart. They had had nothing to say to each other, until this moment.

"I will have to speak to your brother about this," Yamada replied, putting an end to their discussion.

An hour later, he was sitting in Ito Atsuo's reception room. It was not the same one where he had looked at the porcelains and the tiger skin, so many years ago. Ito had built himself a fine Beaux Arts mansion at the foot of South Mountain, said to be one of the most beautiful houses in all of Korea. The room was decorated in French style with Louis Seize chairs and gilded drapes, and though there were a few celadons above a mantelpiece, the tiger skin was nowhere to be found.

"Genzo, how many years has it been? When did you arrive and how long will you be staying?" Ito strode into the room, looking barely aged since they last saw each other.

"Almost eight years. You look exactly the same," Yamada said, shaking Ito's hand.

"Do I? Even so, it hasn't been easy for me. Sit, sit . . . Let's talk about you first though. I heard about your hand, you war hero!"

Yamada sat down on the deep-seated chair and smoothed down his thighs, smiling awkwardly. "Hardly. There were many others who lost their lives. Farm boys, butcher's boys, and heirs to old and respectable families. Some were truly fearless, others were only worried about surviving. But in the end, they all died screaming. Death is a great equalizer."

"But surely you were in the thick of action. Not playing cards or drinking back at the camp!"

"It's not because I'm brave that I lost two fingers . . . It was only a matter of chance."

"Perhaps you're right. Still, you've made a sacrifice, as all men ought to. Even I've had to donate all of the iron and gold mined from my ores in the past six months. As you can imagine, that has been a staggering loss. But as an obedient subject of His Majesty the Emperor, I am glad to play my part. And, of course, I'll receive the rewards for my loyalty once this war is over. Indochina has far more ores than Korea, and Burma is rife with rubies. And within a year, we'll wrest India from Britain's grip. I will be richer than a rajah!"

Ito smiled triumphantly, but his brother-in-law remained silent. The quick-witted servant took advantage of the lull to step between them and lay out the coffee and biscuits.

"Coffee is rarer than gold these days. Drink up, my friend," Ito said.

"It's not going to happen," Yamada muttered, ignoring the steaming cup on the saucer. "The war. We can't win."

"What are you talking about? You were in China. We've conquered that giant beast—the great, decaying, toothless dragon. We've taken Indochina from France, and—"

"You speak that way because you know only what the newspapers are allowed to print. You haven't seen what I've seen on the front lines. We don't have enough oil, iron, rubber, or food to keep this war going. It's us up against Britain and France, and if America gets involved . . . They have hundreds of planes and ships for each one of ours, and thousands of soldiers for each one of ours, do you understand that?"

"Germany and Italy will fight with us if America gets involved."

"Germany is busy fighting Russia, and Italy is nothing without Germany . . . It's fine if you don't believe me."

"If you were not my brother-in-law, I would think that you have sacrilegious ideas in your head, Genzo. This is unbecoming of a general of His Majesty's Imperial Army," Ito warned.

"So be it. I am no longer your brother-in-law, so have me arrested if you desire." Yamada shook his head in ambiguity, more disdainful than melancholy. "Mineko asked me for a divorce. She is with child and wants to marry its father and move back to Japan."

It was Ito's turn to shake his head. He put down his cup and leaned back in his chair like a doctor about to announce some unfortunate but essential fact. "You can't divorce her. I'm sorry, it's not ideal, but you have to think about our families. We could arrange to have a distant relative adopt the child, if you wish."

"I'm afraid it's no longer up to you, Atsuo. I've already made up my mind to divorce her even if it's the last thing I do before I go back to war," Yamada countered. He felt so strangely uplifted by saying this out loud, he nearly wanted to say it again. "You know, Atsuo, I've never really felt free. But in my youth, I thought that constriction was good, beneficial. I saw the world as a system laid out by intelligent and important people, and I was going to be one of them. But now I realize what a fool I've been. That system is nothing but that which brings destruction."

Ito had never heard Yamada speak this way, and was almost worried that he would start acting violently. But Yamada got up calmly in the next moment, pulled down the hem of his uniform jacket, and extended a hand.

"We probably won't see each other again, so this is farewell."

"Genzo, of course we will. Just because of Mineko . . ." Ito started to feel quite sad in spite of himself. "With anyone else I wouldn't care, but I don't want us to part this way."

Yamada smiled, and it was a carefree and genuine smile that Ito had never seen before in his friend. "Fine, Atsuo. I'm being redeployed to China. No idea when I'll come back . . . But be well until we meet again."

# 22

## Zoo Animals

1941

**THOUGH JADE DID EVERYTHING SHE COULD TO NURSE DANI BACK TO** health, her conditions became worse as the summer wore on. Without telling the older woman, Jade had already dug out and sold most of the jewelry under the cherry tree to pay for medicine and food. A few doctors had come and gone without improving Dani's fever and consumption. Among the handful of trinkets that remained, Jade only resolved to keep the diamond necklace until the last. Her gold comb was enough to convince a Western-trained doctor to pay a visit.

"There are sores on her back," Jade whispered as she helped turn Dani to the other side.

"Yes. Typical for the last stage of syphilis," the doctor pronounced, pushing back his glasses. "She must have had a long latency. It's probable that she contracted it when she was still active as a courtesan . . . Syphilis also causes infertility. She has never gotten pregnant, has she?"

Jade looked in fear at Dani's sweat-streaked face; her eyes were closed, her mind was in feverish dreams.

"The other doctors said nothing about syphilis," Jade protested quietly.

"This disease can look like many other things, until the very end when the sores come out. Be careful not to touch them, they are very contagious. As for the prognosis, it's hard to say how long she has left. Tomorrow, I'll send my servant with some arsenic she can take to ease the symptoms."

After the doctor left, Jade went to the kitchen to make whatever she could for dinner. In the pantry there was just a cup of barley left and some dried seaweed she could dress with a half thimble of oil and vinegar. Mindlessly, she pulled out the knife and the cutting board and then realized there wasn't anything that even required chopping. Still, she grasped the handle of the knife with her bony hand, fighting the tears clouding her eyes. She was remembering how she'd cut her hand all those years ago on a hot summer night. If the knife sliced just a few inches above that scar, all her sorrows would be over.

She laid down the knife and prepared the simple barley porridge.

When she went back, Dani was in an increasingly rare, clear, and calm mood. "How ever did you manage to make dinner again?" Dani asked as Jade set down the tray next to her.

"We still had a bit of barley left from when JungHo visited," Jade lied; that supply had run out a long time ago, and the barley was from the black market. "Also, don't worry about where I get the food. You just worry about getting better."

"I'm such a burden on you," Dani said. She was trying to swallow the porridge that Jade was spooning into her mouth without dribbling. But even the control of her facial muscles cost her tremendous effort, and a glistening drop slid down the side of her mouth. "I am like an old, senile woman," Dani said, smiling painfully.

"You will never be an old, senile woman," Jade said. "You will always be beautiful. None of us, not even Luna, could ever compare to you."

"You're just being kind. But more than kind . . ." Dani blinked, and a tear escaped from her still lovely eye. "Do you remember? In Pyongyang, when my sister Silver asked me to take you in, I refused

at first. This girl doesn't have a personality, she's so bland and boring, I told her. But she said you were a good one. She was right; I was wrong."

"I was happy to go along with whatever Lotus suggested. She was the vivacious one. I was shy," Jade said.

"But in hindsight, you're the strongest one of all of us . . . Even after I die, and after the war is over, you'll survive—and hopefully, find a good man and settle down."

"You won't die! Why are you saying such things," Jade protested, though she couldn't stop the tears from flowing.

"I heard the doctor—I wasn't asleep," Dani whispered in a fading voice, straining to turn her face. Jade rushed to lower her head down onto the pillow.

"Shh, you must rest now. Don't tire yourself out by saying such useless things."

"Don't pretend it's not true, because I don't have a lot of time to waste. Listen to me carefully, Jade. Just two things . . ." She closed her eyes. "First, I want you to have my diamond necklace. No matter what, hold on to it. Don't sell it right now—use it when there seems to be no other recourse. Of course, this whole house and everything in it will be yours too when I'm gone. But that necklace is itself more valuable than everything else combined, remember that.

"Secondly, I'd like to see two people before I die. They are the only two men I've truly cared for in my life. Will you help to bring them here? I don't think I can even write a letter anymore."

The next day, Jade wrote and mailed out two letters: one to Lee MyungBo's home address, and the other to Kim SungSoo at his publishing house.

\* \* \*

**MYUNGBO RETURNED HOME LATE** that week after meeting with his comrades in the Coalition. It tied together groups from all points of the political spectrum under the one banner of independence: the Anarchists, the Communists, the Nationalists, the Christians, the Buddhists, and the Cheondoists. He was one of the senior leaders of



the Communists, but among their ranks there were those who saw the struggle as primarily between the bourgeoisie and the proletariat, the rich and the poor, and not between Japan and Korea, as MyungBo had always believed. The Anarchist credo was that any social order was destructive and oppressive. The Nationalists were the conservatives and some of them put more faith in America than in Korea itself. They also opposed the Communists almost as often as they fought the Japanese. Then some of the Christians were Pacifists, although a few of them had gladly assassinated Japanese generals and governors before putting a gun to their own heads. All the groups believed that Japan would send every Korean man to the mines and every Korean woman to the military brothels rather than admit defeat; their opinions diverged on what they could do to implode Japan from within before that point.

When he returned home, MyungBo found out that there was a letter from Dani—and that his wife received it herself from the postman. It lay unopened on top of his desk, but he blushed to the roots of his ears at the thought that his wife, a perfectly sensible woman, would have noticed the neat, feminine handwriting on the envelope. His wife was an old-fashioned gentlewoman who had been taught that a woman's jealousy was a crime graver than a man's philandering. If he had brought home a second wife, like so many men of his stature, she would have accepted it without objection. Nevertheless, MyungBo had never deceived her even in secret. It annoyed him that he'd been faithful all these years only to be implicated in something unsavory and beneath his nature. But that he'd felt real passion for Dani at one point was not forgotten. He opened and quickly read the letter, which was dictated to Jade and devoid of any mention of a serious illness. It didn't take long for him to decide to ignore it.

Unlike MyungBo, SungSoo read Dani's letter with some warm feeling. Glossed up though he was—for his life hadn't hardened his exterior as much as sealed it like a glistening, poreless surface—SungSoo could still occasionally recall himself as a young man and fall into a reverie about his lost innocence. Pleasant, spring-scented memories flooded him upon seeing Dani's letter. He could not fail to

acknowledge that some of the most formative moments of his life had involved her. In fact, anytime he wrote a story or a novel, some trace elements of Dani always made it onto the pages. She was the ink of his thoughts. She had been extraordinary in every way.

But the idea of seeing her again didn't immediately appeal to SungSoo. Dani was fifty-six years old. He now sought the company of courtesans who were younger than his own daughter. If he saw Dani again, he would have no inclination to rekindle their relationship. Rejecting her would hurt not only her feelings, but his own as well. He was loath to see her ravishing beauty diminished and her attractive spell broken. So he wrote back that he only had the fondest memories and the best wishes for her, but that their lives had gone their separate ways so long ago. Of course, if she were in financial hardship, he would try to help her as much as possible. All of this was expressed in the most elegant and courteous fashion, and afterward he reread his own letter with the characteristic satisfaction of writers who take pride in their own work, even correspondences.

\* \* \*

**"PLEASE WAIT HERE,"** a young male assistant said to Jade, gesturing at the hard-backed chair outside the office. The auto garage was one huge space filled with cars, military trucks, stacks of tires, parts, and technicians moving rhythmically among the miscellany. Off to one side, a pair of Japanese officers were dropping off their armored truck and explaining something to a mechanic. There was a small, walled-off section in a corner that served as an office; beside its door, a few chairs served as a waiting room of sorts. Jade sat down carefully and watched, mesmerized at the speed with which HanChol's employees worked. There were at least thirty on the floor—mostly young men but some with salted hair.

Ten minutes or so had passed when the door opened and Jade sprang to her feet. A woman emerged from the office, followed by HanChol himself. Jade stopped herself from calling out his name and

stayed rooted in her spot, suddenly wishing she could disappear. But HanChol's face lit up in recognition.

"Jade!" he said in his low voice as the woman beside him looked on curiously.

"How have you been?" Jade asked, and the young woman cleared her throat.

"Miss Jade, this is Miss SeoHee—SungSoo *sunsengnim's* daughter. Miss SeoHee, Miss Jade is a very old friend."

Though a bit shorter than Jade, the young woman was gracefully built with slender, stemlike lower legs below a maroon skirt. Her nose was imperfect, but her large and wide-set eyes gave the impression of fresh beauty.

"I feel as though I recognize you . . ." SeoHee said. "You're the actress in *One Lucky Day*! I went to see it at the cinema when I was in middle school."

Jade bowed lightly in acknowledgment. She hadn't been in any new films since 1936 but many people still remembered her. The only movies being made these days were propaganda films. Those days spent on set and at cafés were so faded that she sometimes felt as though she'd dreamed the whole thing.

"It is very nice to meet you," Jade said, and SeoHee laughed.

"Your voice is very different from what I'd imagined. I've only seen your silent films . . . Well, how do you two know each other?"

"When I was a student, I used to make money by driving a rickshaw. Miss Jade was one of my best clients," HanChol stepped in. "We'll have some catching up to do."

"Of course. I will get going then. It was nice to meet you, Miss Jade," SeoHee said, gazing confidently with her shining black pools of eyes before taking her leave.

Drawing a deep breath, HanChol opened the door to his office, and they both walked inside. A bare lightbulb hung from the ceiling, casting an orange light over the large wooden desk piled high with ledgers and books. HanChol sat down behind this desk and spread his hands, palms down, on the papers.

"How have you been?" he said at last. "It's been such a long time . . ."

"Seven years," Jade replied. She always had an awareness in the back of her mind of how much time had passed since she'd last seen him. "I heard about your companies, they're the talk of the town. I was happy to know you're doing so well. Didn't I tell you how successful you'll be?"

"This is nothing much. I'm only just beginning," HanChol said, smiling.

"You didn't even know how cars work, and now look at you. This repair shop, so many employees all working under you. I could never have figured out something so complicated."

"Cars are not that hard to understand if you take the time to study each part. That's why I like them—their simplicity. Arithmetics, accounting, these are all simple matters. It's dealing with people that gets complicated." He wore a weary smile that reminded her of those early years when he'd had nothing.

"You haven't changed at all. You still look the same," Jade said. In truth, HanChol had aged. Subtle lines were forked along his forehead; the peaks and valleys of his face had become sharper, setting his handsome features into high relief. He had acquired a more distinguished appearance through aging, as often happens to men between the prime of their youth and a true middle age. He wasn't wearing a tie, and the loosened collar revealed the top of his strong chest.

"You haven't either," HanChol replied. "But why have you come today? Is it because you need food or money? Because if that's the case, I will do everything I can to help . . ."

"No, that's not why I'm here," Jade protested, thinking she would rather starve to death than ask HanChol for food. It devastated her to hear him say that out loud.

"I'm here because my aunt Dani is very sick. She is dying."

"Oh, I'm so sorry to hear that." HanChol exhaled, shaking his head. "I know she raised you up."

"Before it's too late, she wants to see someone who meant a lot to her in the past. Kim SungSoo *sunsengnim* . . ."

When the news of HanChol's thriving businesses had first reached Jade, she had learned that Kim SungSoo was his first

employer and benefactor. After turning the publishing house around as its business manager, HanChol had then opened the garage with an initial investment from SungSoo. When Dani told her about SungSoo, Jade finally realized that HanChol's mentor was one of Dani's great loves.

"I've already sent him a letter dictated by Aunt Dani. And he wrote back saying that if it's money she needs, he'll try to help, but that he isn't up to seeing her face-to-face."

"That's unfortunate. He is not a bad person, you know . . ."

"I understand. He probably doesn't know how much peace he would bring her, how much it would mean to a dying woman. That's why I've come to you. You are so close to him—would you speak to him about this?"

HanChol's first impulse was to say no, but Jade's expression of luminous sorrow gave him pause. Her face had thinned and her ivory skin, glittering with sweat, was pulled closer to her bones. There was a new haggardness to her appearance, and when she proudly held her chin up, he could see the subtle horizontal lines skating across her sensitive throat. If he had to describe how she looked, he would have said: like a song your mother used to sing. Or an unopened letter from someone you loved a long time ago, found in the back of a drawer. Or an old tree that suddenly comes to life one spring, its black branches aflame with flowers, as if saying *I, I, I*. But what moved him wasn't just the remnants of the past. What was he seeing now that he hadn't seen before? It was something mysterious and close to her true self. He couldn't deny that he still found her alluring, even intoxicating. Her bare lips were the color of young girls' nails tinted with touch-me-not petals.

"I can't promise anything. He has his own mind about things and it's not really my position to tell him what to do," he said. "But I will try my best."

"Thank you. Thank you so much." She sighed in relief. "Well, I won't keep you away from work any longer."

"Let me walk you out."

Without speaking, they made their way through the garage and out the entrance. HanChol was intending to walk with her just a little

and then go back inside, but the brilliant twilight forced him to stay. The bloodred sky and the long purple shadows made it difficult to say goodbye.

"How are you getting home? It's far from here."

"It's not that bad . . . And this weather is good. It's not so hot and humid anymore."

"I want to see you get in safely," he said, protectively grazing his hand on her upper back for a moment. Jade was relieved to discover that something familiar had returned to the crepuscular air between them. Did he still love her? She dared not say. Did she still love him? She had never stopped. The answer was Always.

They started walking south along the ChangGyeong Palace, the green-black branches of zelkova trees leaning over the walls.

"This reminds me of when I was young. My friend JungHo took me to see Giant the elephant. We climbed on top of a tree to see him for free, then got chased away by a guard." Jade smiled. "Have you ever been?"

HanChol had not.

"They have so many animals—lions, a hippopotamus and her baby in a swimming pool, camels, zebras, and elephants. Korean animals too. The crescent moon bears and the tigers."

"I've never seen any of those except in photographs. Not even the Korean ones. There are not so many bears or tigers left in the wild now."

"I know. And I heard they have almost nothing to feed the animals at the zoo since the war. Poor things—not knowing anything that's going on, waiting in their cages, wondering if anyone will come help," she said, turning to face him. "Why won't anyone help them?"

"Someone will, Jade. The zookeepers . . . they'll find some food for the animals. You just focus on taking care of yourself and Aunt Dani." HanChol nudged her waist gently, recognizing the curve under the muslin blouse. As soon as they were facing each other, they could no longer pretend at indifference. He wrapped her in his arms and squeezed the bony frame as hard as he could. A familiar

happiness coursed through them, and suddenly the world seemed less terrifying.

"If I die, will you please remember me?" Jade asked, her cheek pressed against his chest.

"You're not going to die. I'll make sure you're safe. Come on, let's go home."

Those last three words—among the sweetest words one can hear from a lover. There were no lights in the house when they arrived, hand in hand. Without going to see Dani, Jade led HanChol to her room. She was surprised by their urgency, how much they wanted to feel each other after all the years of absence. But when they were fully naked, HanChol stopped touching her just so he could gaze down at her whole body. She didn't feel shy because she knew he would only see her as beautiful, even now when her jutting ribs and pelvis held dark blue moon shadows in their hollows. He softly touched the sharp bones above her breasts, before lacing his hands with hers and kissing her in the mouth.

It was the deepest part of the night when they were finished and lying in each other's arms.

"I've missed you so much," she said then.

"I've missed you too." He gave her another kiss.

"So what now? Where do we go from here?"

"What do you mean?" HanChol asked, furrowing his eyebrows.

"I make you happy and you make me happy. When life is so short, why do we keep wasting time like this?"

"Ah, Jade." HanChol sighed, and Jade felt his arm slacken around her a bit. "I'm getting married in two weeks," he said.

Jade's heart started to hammer uncontrollably. "What do you mean? To whom?"

"Miss SeoHee."

"She's basically a child! And you're telling me this, when we're still lying naked together in my bed?"

"She's twenty-three, which is well past the age when most girls like her get married. And I'm sorry if I've offended you—" he said. Jade was pressing herself up and away from him. "But I didn't plan on seeing you today or coming to your house, did I? It was you who

showed up unannounced. And yes, I was attracted to you and acted on it. Was that wrong of me? Perhaps to SeoHee, although in the grand scheme of things, I don't think it matters. But I didn't lie to you. If you'd asked me earlier I would have answered the same way, we wouldn't have slept together, and that would have been the end."

"The end? The end!" Jade was sitting up, her black hair lapping around her gaunt shoulders. The ease with which he pronounced those words shredded her insides.

"Do you even care for this girl? You like her young and pretty face? Or is it about her money? You prefer her to me because of her rich father . . ." She balled up a bit of the comforter and squeezed so that the veins popped on top of her withered hands.

"Don't. Please don't," HanChol said quietly.

"I loved and ached for you every single day, all these years. You know this is true because you feel it, this constant warmth and light inside your heart, everywhere you go. But I will try my best to stop loving you now. One day you're going to realize that the sun isn't shining inside you anymore and you'll know I no longer think of you." She got up and pulled on her threadbare clothes. Shrugging into her blouse, she turned around.

"When I come back, you won't be in my room anymore. And just one more thing—for every bit of love you've given me, you've also caused me an equal amount of suffering. So I have nothing left, in all senses of that word. Please see yourself out," she said, then stepped out of her room.

Jade walked quickly to the garden and sat facing the weeds for a while. When she came back, her cot was empty but still dented in the shape of HanChol's body. She lay down fully clothed and quickly fell asleep, as though her body knew that it was the only thing that could help her.

About an hour later, just before sunrise, Jade woke up and immediately went to her aunt's room. Dani didn't answer when Jade called her name and sat down next to her.

"Wake up for a moment and drink some water. The heat's finally broken and it's a beautiful morning . . ."



There was something about the way that her words scattered unheard that reminded Jade of the white seeds of plane trees. In the summer, when the sun shone just a certain way, the fluffy particles sparkled like stars in the air, each seed tracing a resolutely different path, although the wind blew only in one direction. Jade once watched for a long time to see if they came down to the ground; and they did not, they just kept floating between the earth and the sky. It was the way her words hung in the air like seeds that let her know that her aunt had died.

# 23

## The Beginning of the End

1944

**AFTER THE MORNING MEETING AT THE PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT** ended, JungHo descended the staircase and walked out into the courtyard. As he blinked a few times at the alabaster light, one of his comrades caught up to him.

"Brother JungHo, are you coming with us to play tennis?" The comrade was a son of an academic family, the end of a long line of white-bearded scholars and ministers. Unlike his progenitors, he was more of a physical type, a star athlete back in high school. He was only twenty-two and constantly raring to do things, which was all in keeping with the directive that they spend plenty of time exercising. Sometimes he even looked disappointed that he had to sleep at night. At thirty-eight, JungHo both envied and doted on that puppyish energy.

"I can't today. I have to get the soles of my shoes fixed," JungHo said with a smile.

"Next time, then." The young tennis player bowed to him and hurried out of the courtyard.

JungHo followed him out a little more slowly. The Provisional Government was housed in a dark, three-story building accessible

through an alley; once outside the courtyard and on the main road, the restless light and sounds of the French Concession took hold of him more fully. JungHo had the impression that the red brick buildings here were redder, and the plane trees lining the boulevards greener. The long-limbed and slender-hipped women strolled in skintight cheongsam, saying something unintelligible in throaty Shanghainese. There was a kind of music in their steps, and in the air scented with cooking oil and tea. In spite of the Japanese flags fluttering ominously on the buildings, people here seemed far less tormented. MyungBo had said that the Chinese were accustomed to war and dynastic changes, much more than the Koreans were. They had less concern over which master they served, he'd explained. Within the boundaries of the French Concession at least, the impact of the Japanese occupation was less felt than in the rest of the city.

The cobbler was located just a few blocks east, on an alley even darker and dingier than their own street. The Chinese owner greeted JungHo in Korean and took away his shoes to the back to be resoled. JungHo sat on a chair and waited in his socks; those were the only pair of shoes he'd brought to Shanghai. He even played tennis in them.

After a while, the cobbler brought back the shoes, resoled and shined.

"These look as good as new," JungHo said, lacing up his shoes.

"*Ya ya*. See you next time." The owner smiled and bowed to him. JungHo bowed back.

JungHo let his feet lead him to the dock, thinking of those words *next time*. It occurred to him that he probably wouldn't ever need to resole his shoes again. His shirt, his trousers, his hat—everything he owned was all he'd ever need. But how much more tender were those words, *next time*, knowing that there won't be one? How much more did he look into people's faces with compassion and forgiveness? The slow-burning rage he'd felt in Seoul had been washed away and all that was left was a sense of being free.

He slipped past the cars lined up by the dock and walked along the wharf alone, watching the seagulls float like skilled sailors of the sky. Every day he came here and every day, he saw something

different in the color of the sky, in the crying of the birds, in how the light glittered on the Pacific Ocean. It was achingly beautiful how new the world was each day, and he only wished that he could have realized it a little earlier.

**JUNGHO HAD GONE TO SHANGHAI** with three other men. One of them had shot and killed a Japanese general at a train station and then was tortured to death in prison. Another had walked into a police station and thrown a bomb hidden inside a lunch box, and was shot on the spot when it failed to go off. In January, the third comrade—the young tennis player—disguised himself as a cook at a military banquet, opened fire in the ballroom, and screamed “Korean Independence *manseh!*” on the rooftop, before getting swarmed by dozens of soldiers, his entire body perforated by bullets. JungHo hadn’t seen this, as they strictly adhered to their own assignments; instead, he had heard about it from others who read the Chinese newspapers. JungHo tried to imagine his comrade in death, but he could only picture him laughing breathlessly after scoring the match point.

It was now JungHo’s turn.

His assignment was to assassinate the deputy governor-general as he made a stop in Harbin, a thousand miles north of Shanghai. The governor was touring Manchukuo, a puppet state ruled in name by the last emperor of China but de facto a Japanese colony. Swallowing such a large territory was proving thorny: the Han Chinese and ethnic Manchurians had formed a guerilla army in Harbin, and Koreans for their own part had been attacking there for decades.

The security, therefore, was seemingly impenetrable. In the weeks leading up to the governor’s arrival, there were Japanese soldiers stationed at every place of note, from squares, banks, and post offices, to even large shops and popular restaurants. JungHo was to shoot the governor while he was making a speech in front of thousands of spectators and hundreds of officers. There was no question of whether JungHo would survive; the only question was whether he would succeed in his mission before getting killed. In

case he missed, JungHo would be accompanied by a backup sniper who had just recently joined his group. He was twenty-six years old and spoke slowly with a bad stutter. JungHo had never seen him hit the bull's-eye during target practice.

The night before the mission, JungHo took his backup out for a walk.

"It's fre-fre-freezing outside," the younger man said quietly.

"It will clear our minds, Comrade Cho. Better than sitting in that tiny, stuffy room," JungHo said, claspng Cho on the back encouragingly. They crossed the town center and made their way to the little clearing by the Songhua River, a popular spot for lovers seeking to hide from prying eyes. There was no one there now, however. Cho's teeth were rattling as he tried to retract his neck into his coat collar like a turtle. JungHo was also shivering, but the formidable cold in Harbin reminded him of his childhood in PyongAhn. It invigorated him and soothed the restlessness from being cooped inside the overheated room. Even all these years later, he didn't like being indoors for very long.

"Now I can breathe. I was getting antsy about tomorrow," JungHo said. Cho made no reply and just stood there, creating white puffs in the darkness. "Remember, you don't have to do anything if all goes according to plan. And if I succeed—and they take me—you don't try to help or anything. You understand me?" JungHo looked sharply at Cho, and he nodded.

"You're a quiet fellow," JungHo said wistfully. He missed the warm, muscular, familiar closeness he'd had with his underlings who used to call him Chief. He didn't feel that with anyone in Shanghai or Harbin, not the way he once did with his blood brothers YoungGu and Loach. "Do you have family to go back to?" he asked.

"N-n-n-no."

"What about a sweetheart? You don't have a girl back home?"

Cho shook his head. He did look a little too simple or too quiet to have anyone care for him, and JungHo sighed.

When JungHo was a child and his father was still living, there was a strange wedding in his village. It was like a normal wedding except that it was held at night by the torchlight. As usual, all the

villagers were invited, and he too joined with the other children in following the groom's horse to the bride's house . . . But there was no groom wearing a blue robe and a horsehair hat on the saddle. He had died a bachelor five years previously from smallpox. To calm his spirit, the bachelor's parents had reached out to a family of a recently deceased virgin with a wedding proposal. At the bride's house, her relatives and neighbors were murmuring around the table laden with food and wine. Everyone acted as though they could see the ghost bride and the ghost groom, praising her beauty and teasing his eagerness. Hearing their whispers made JungHo feel as though he could see the girl blushing with pleasure and the young man trying not to laugh at his mates' heckling. Once the ceremony was finished, the couple was led to their marriage bed; and the villagers swore that as soon as the chamber's door was closed, torchlights in the courtyard all went out. This was taken to mean that the ghosts truly liked each other and that they could finally rest, for a soul that's never been married couldn't move on to the next world.

No one would hold a ghost wedding for JungHo's bachelor soul, however. He began wondering how Jade was doing and then stopped himself abruptly. So much had happened in China that he'd had little chance to brood, and this had been good for his recovery. He told himself in no uncertain terms that he hated her and that he looked forward to never seeing her again, in this life or next. The wind roared into his ear in agreement.

"Come, let's go back now," JungHo said, but Cho shook his head obstinately, rooted to the frozen ground.

"My family was bu-bu-burned after the March. Th-th-that's why I'm he-here," Cho said in a burst of speech that he'd been composing in his head for some time.

JungHo looked at him, and felt sorry for thinking that Cho was simple. Or perhaps he *was* simple, but calling him so wasn't entirely honorable. MyungBo would say so.

"Tomorrow, you'll get your revenge. Then you'll go back home, marry a pretty girl, and have lots of children. Now let's go eat the best meal of our lives," JungHo said, patting his young comrade in

the back. Off in the distance the clock tower struck ten times, and JungHo held on to the misty halo of sound after each stroke.

\* \* \*

**THE SUN ROSE WITHOUT INSISTENCE;** it was a visitor in the North, and as such always hurried away to its true home in the South. Under the monochrome sky, hundreds of white flags flashing their red dots were crisscrossed between the buildings. JungHo was standing among thousands of spectators filling up the length of Central Street like frosted trees in a birch forest. It was silent save for a military band playing a march on the stage, next to the podium where the governor would later speak. JungHo found Cho's pale face some thirty yards to his right and gave the slightest nod.

The band wrapped up the song and the crowd's energy shifted to the right side of the stage. JungHo could feel his hair standing on edge underneath his fedora, and his heart was pounding so much that he was sure it was rattling the pistol in his inner pocket. But his colleagues had already completed their missions and shown him what to do. He too would kill himself cleanly before they got to him. He only worried that he would miss and that his death would mean nothing.

As the images of his impending end reeled through his mind, a bird—some sort of heron—flew into his line of vision over the tops of the buildings. It was obscure and fleeting, like the death omens he'd seen and resisted in the past; but he knew instinctively that it was, in fact, an opposite force. It reminded him of his father, the famous marksman who could shoot a quail from a hundred yards away. His father's father had once shot and killed a tiger with nothing but a bow and arrow. The same hunter's gift ran through his veins as clearly as his name was Nam JungHo. The cigarette case, also in his inner pocket, was resting just over his heart.

A weathered old man covered in medals walked onto the stage, surrounded by his entourage. It was unmistakably the governor, judging by the purplish birthmark on his left cheek. JungHo had carefully studied his photographs, since the Japanese sometimes

used doubles of important officials to appear in public. A wall of officers surrounded the governor almost completely as he took to the podium. The only way to get a good aim was to stand directly in front of the podium, and to do that JungHo would have to push his way through the crowd, attracting attention to himself. Seeing the guards scanning the crowd and standing ready to shoot, JungHo stayed rooted in his spot.

The governor finished his speech and there was an applause. JungHo had hoped that there would be an opening as the governor left the stage, but the wall of officers kept its formation around the leader and started moving away. He was running out of time, they were going to get offstage unharmed.

JungHo took out his pistol, aimed, and fired.

An officer keeled over with a scream, and the wall was breached. Others onstage instinctively threw themselves on the ground, and one of the guards tried to shield the governor with his own body. JungHo aimed at that guard and fired; the bullet went clear through his forehead and he was felled like a tree. People were screaming around JungHo, pushing to get out of harm's way, but with so many bodies pressed together no one knew exactly where the shots were coming from.

Another shot was heard, and it wasn't from JungHo's gun. No one fell onstage that time. He looked to the right and caught a glimpse of Cho, gripping his pistol with both hands and shaking badly. Another guard was dragging the governor by the arm, taking him offstage. JungHo fired again and saw the old man fall down, clutching his chest.

"Go, Cho, Go!" JungHo shouted to his right. People around him had flattened themselves to the ground and he'd lost his cover. He ran without turning back to see if they were following him. He could hear shouts, screams . . . Above it all, someone yelled "*K-Korea manseh!*" followed by another gunshot. JungHo stopped in his tracks and turned his head toward the sound. Then there it was—the voiceless whisper in his ear, urging him to flee. He obeyed, changing direction and sprinting to his right. Soon he was shielded by hundreds of spectators on all sides.



Near the edge of the crowd, there was an open space of roughly twenty yards in front of the entrance of a department store. As he was hesitating, JungHo felt a hand on his elbow. In a flash, he aimed his pistol at the man behind him. The green-eyed man said something in his plangent language, taking off his fur hat and pressing it to JungHo's chest. A Russian. JungHo ducked under people's heads and took off his fedora. He threw it on the ground, stashed his pistol in his inner pocket, and put on the fur hat. He resisted the urge to run and crossed over the empty street calmly. About fifty yards away, he could see a clutch of soldiers running into the crowd, screaming orders. When he pushed the rotating glass door into the department store, he knew he had made it. He exited out the back entrance onto a side street and crumpled down on the icy stone stairs. "I'm sorry, Cho, so sorry," he said repeatedly to himself, choking from dry, hoarse cries as though even his tears had frozen.

\* \* \*

**IT WAS A BALMY, EARLY-SUMMER** evening when JungHo came back to Seoul. He was more gaunt than ever before, and his old suit jacket was loose on his shoulders. The Great South Gate still stood in its place, but everywhere else had changed. More Japanese flags were hanging from every building and flagpole, yet the streets were eerily deserted and there were no cars or trucks in sight. JungHo knew that there was no more oil anywhere in the city. Japan was pouring all its resources into fighting the United States in the Pacific, and boiling pine roots and cones down to create fuel. This sappy liquid gummed up the engine like taffy after a few hours. As a gasoline-saving strategy, fighter pilots were ramming their planes into American warships instead of flying back to base. The rumor was that in black-green jungles and insidious islands the Japanese troops were fighting to the last man with sharpened bamboo spears. At night, animals of the forest feasted on their flesh.

He had an hour and a half of walking from the station to reach MyungBo's villa. It was past eight thirty, and there was still a gauze

of gray twilight left behind by the sun on the western horizon. JungHo hadn't eaten anything all day and despite his ability to withstand great physical distress, felt the last remaining strength being drained from his body.

He decided to take a break and leaned against a ginkgo tree. It was calm rather than windy, but the air was cool and fresh. The nearly full moon was rising in the opalescent sky. It was particularly bright and beautiful over a lightless city. Out of habit, JungHo touched the silver cigarette case in his inside pocket. It gave him a sense of comfort, as always. But at that moment, he heard a voice call out from behind him.

"Raise your hands slowly and step away from the tree."

JungHo pulled out his hand from his jacket and walked sideways out of the tree's shadow.

"No sudden movements. Don't try anything stupid," the voice said, coming closer to him from the back.

JungHo wasn't carrying a gun with him. If he'd had one, he would have jumped back toward the tree and shot his interlocutor, then fled through the network of narrow alleyways untouched even by the moonlight. But all he had now was a knife hidden on the inside of his waistband, and that would be useless against a man behind him with a gun. He could hear two pairs of feet approaching him; one of them finally reached him and roughly whipped his arms behind his back before cuffing his wrists. When that was done, an officer wearing a thin, slanted mustache came into his view.

"What is this for?" JungHo asked and then immediately regretted his weakness. He'd intended to maintain a stony silence.

"Running away in the middle of the night . . . Avoiding conscription, are we?" the first officer said in Japanese, but based on his features JungHo surmised that the man was in fact Korean. The other officer, who had actually handcuffed JungHo, looked no older than sixteen and almost afraid of his own captive. JungHo kept his mouth shut this time.

The three of them walked in near darkness to Jongno Police Station. They arrived at eleven, and JungHo was uncuffed and thrown into a cell filled with men, sleeping on their sides. No one

said a word to JungHo except to grumble at the lack of space. He sidled up to the only spot of empty floor remaining, next to an overflowing chamber pot. The only posture he could maintain was sitting upright and hugging his knees in front of his chest, and in this position he spent the night and most of the following morning.

By noon, some of his cellmates started getting taken out, one by one, until JungHo could sit with his legs stretched out in front of him. His head was pounding and his throat was burning as if he'd swallowed a fistful of sand. JungHo tried to remember all those other times in his life when he'd gone even longer without water or food or lying down, but he'd been younger then. In the past, he'd also had the conviction he needed to live longer, see something through. Now, however, he felt as though he'd already seen it through—whatever *it* was. To end his own suffering did not seem like such a bad choice.

Just as his thoughts were turning to the knife still hidden in his waistband, an officer came around and picked him up for questioning. But instead of a solitary room as JungHo had imagined, he was taken to a large courtyard where three army officers were seated at a long table. The prisoners were filing in front of them in one long line, and then being taken across the courtyard. When JungHo reached the table, the decorated general in the center looked at him with an almost bored expression.

"Name and date of birth," the general said, pointing at a piece of paper with a hand that was missing the last two fingers. JungHo wrote down his name and birthdate, stamped his thumb with red ink, and went to join the others standing in the courtyard.

The sun made its arc across the sky and the shadows in the courtyard moved with it. The men burned in its spear-like rays without daring to follow the shade. JungHo's throat tasted of ashes, but he closed his eyes and kept himself empty of any thoughts, especially those of water. By the time the light had turned bloodred, there were hundreds of men in the courtyard, standing in silence.

The three officers got up from the table and walked over to the men. The general, with the grim look of someone doing something

purely out of formalities, stepped forward and spoke in sharp, clipped Japanese.

"You have each been blessed with the opportunity to defend our empire from the grasp of Western Imperialism. Some of you will fight in the Pacific against the arrogant America, and some of you will fight in Manchuria against the hateful Russia. No matter what, dying for His Majesty the Emperor is the highest glory that can be attained by his humble subjects, an honor for which you must all be grateful."

The general stepped back and let his adjuncts take over; they barked orders to strip down into undergarments. All around JungHo, men hurriedly took off their clothes and folded them into a bundle at their feet. Most of them, who didn't understand Japanese, merely followed what the others were doing with a dazed and questioning look. They didn't fully grasp that they were being shipped off to the jungles or the steppes to fight with nothing but bamboo spears, and their eyes absurdly reflected equal parts fear and hope. JungHo alone stood still in his sweat-soaked jacket and pants. He actually felt a lightness of heart, realizing that this would all be over soon, and that he may even be able to kill a few high-ranking officers before slashing his own throat.

"There, you son of a bitch!" One of the officers noticed JungHo in his clothes and shouted at him. "Step forward!"

JungHo stood in his spot, but the men around him stepped away from him, creating a pocket of empty space. The officer pulled out his gun and aimed it at JungHo's head.

"Take off all your clothes immediately, or I will blow off your head like a melon," the officer said.

JungHo decided to take off his jacket and lure the officer in. When he shrugged it off of his shoulders, something small and shiny tumbled out from the inside pocket—his silver cigarette case. Reflexively, JungHo bent over to pick it up, and the officer strode toward him, the gun still leveled at his head.

"You dumb son of a bitch! Leave that there!" the officer cried out in a rage. JungHo still reached for the cigarette case, as if he didn't

understand or care. The moment his hand closed in on the case, the officer stepped on his wrist and dug into the ground.

"You dirty, stinking pig!" the officer screamed. The veins were popping out on the back of JungHo's fist as he held on to the case; but after a few seconds, he released his grip. The officer stepped off his wrist and kicked the case far behind him, smiling contemptuously. He had lowered his gun in his moment of satisfaction. His voice too was husky from thirst, and fat drops of sweat rolled off from under his visor and fell on the dust. After swiping at his brow, he gave JungHo a leisurely kick in the stomach, just as animals toy with their kill before eating. JungHo crouched low and felt for the knife inside his waistband.

"Stop!" a voice called out from a distance. "Leave him be." It was the general. He was striding toward them with something that glinted red in the last rays of the sun—the cigarette case.

"Where did you find this?" he said, holding up the case in front of his face, standing closely enough that JungHo could easily kill him.

"My father gave it to me," JungHo found himself answering.

"Your father?" the general repeated, frowning and apparently deep in thought. "Where are you from? And what is your father's name?"

"I'm from PyongAhn province. My father's name was Nam KyungSoo."

The general turned the case over in his hand that was missing the last two digits. The man was completely vulnerable—but as JungHo felt for the handle of his knife with his thumb, the general lifted his head and fixed his gaze on him.

"I gave this to your father . . . We met by chance in the mountains, almost thirty years ago. He saved my life. I told him then that he can show this to anyone if he ever gets into trouble. Little did I think it would be me," he said. "I never thought I'd see this again."

JungHo couldn't understand anything except that somehow, this man had known his father and even gifted a token—the same heirloom he himself had cherished his entire life. All thoughts of killing the man vanished.

"My first instinct was that you've somehow stolen this, but you are telling the truth."

"Why would you believe me?" JungHo asked in confusion.

"Because you look exactly like your father," the officer said, running his finger on the engraving. "See, there. My name . . . Yamada Genzo."

Yamada turned to his adjunct, who had suddenly become meek. "This one, I'll handle myself. Take the others to the camp," he said. "Try not to kill them all before they even reach the front. We need bodies." The adjuncts nodded and started rounding up the men, and Yamada motioned to JungHo.

"Follow me," he said, leading the way outside the courtyard and into a corridor, then a small office with a window opening out to the streets. Once inside, Yamada gestured at a chair against the wall. He poured a cup of water from a jar and handed it to JungHo.

"Drink," he said, and sat down behind a desk. JungHo collapsed onto the chair and at the same time, gulped down the water in a single swig. He himself refilled his cup and drank while Yamada busied himself with writing something.

"How did you meet my father?" JungHo asked once he was done with his third cup.

"We were hunting and we got lost. I found your father in the woods. He was too weak to make it down on his own, but I gave him my food and he recovered. Later on, when we were making our way down . . . A tiger tried to attack us, but your father somehow drove it away. He had nothing—no weapons, just his bare hands. I still don't understand how he did it." Yamada looked up from his papers and shook his head. "He was a small man, like you."

"He told us the story of the tiger a few times, but he never mentioned meeting any soldiers . . ." JungHo wondered whether his father left that part out because he was ashamed to have helped the Japanese, even by coincidence. "So is that why you gave him that case?" JungHo asked.

"You could say that." Yamada sighed. "Now listen very carefully. I've written up a letter saying that the bearer of this paper is on a special mission assigned by General Yamada Genzo, the commander

of the Fifth Army. Take this and go somewhere safe. If anyone from the military questions you or tries to take you in, show the letter and they'll release you. It's very important that you don't get caught again, you understand? If you get sent away, you won't come back. The Germans have surrendered long ago, we're alone against America to the south, and Russia is coming for us from the north. The war will be over soon, but not before we lose every single troop in our armies. That's already been decided."

Yamada put his red seal at the bottom of the letter, put it in an envelope, and handed it to JungHo along with the cigarette case.

"You should keep the case," JungHo said.

"No, it's yours," Yamada said with the faintest trace of a smile. For a moment he looked more whole, like someone remembering a funny episode from childhood; then the light in his face faded and he assumed his usual dry air. "You should leave now. Good luck." Yamada opened the door and stood aside. JungHo stumbled to his feet and left the office, not even knowing the exit out of the building but slouching like an animal toward the hint of fresh air and the way to freedom.

\* \* \*

**JADE SAT IN A DAZE**, facing the garden, wondering how the trees alone went on, indifferent to everything. She had finally sold all her jewels, clothes, furniture, and linens, and there was nothing in the house that was of any value save for the diamond necklace. It was still buried under the *aengdoo* cherry tree, which bore the only reliable food Jade had for a month in early summer. There came a point with hunger when even breathing became exhausting. Everywhere, people who used to be perfectly well before were quietly starving to death, too ashamed to draw attention to their calamity. Jade also thought of simply lying down and never getting up again, but some hidden energy roused her from her stupor. She listened to a voice in her head saying, I want to live. That she was hearing things didn't faze her, because she was past the point of surprise. It only reminded her of what JungHo said once about being

given a clear choice to either hold on to life or let go. He had told her he'd refused death every single time.

She went back inside her room and put on a worn blouse and skirt with shaking hands. The effort of dressing made her keel over several times, clawing at the wall to steady herself. But she pulled her hair—now grown long again—up in a chignon, pressed a blue hat on top of her head, and walked out to the streets.

She wandered the boulevard in Jongno, looking for a for-hire sign in the shop windows. There weren't any flyers on the storefronts, and she couldn't muster the courage to walk in and ask if they had an opening. After about an hour of searching, she swore she would go inside the next store, which was an upscale women's dressmaker. The bell chimed as she opened the door, and the pretty shop owner greeted her with a smooth smile. "Welcome. How can I help you today?"

Jade tried to say why she'd come in, but found it beyond her power. It was clear the owner didn't need help around the small shop; and she already looked annoyed that this penniless woman was taking up her time.

"I'm okay, thank you," Jade mumbled, heading for the door.

As she was nearly running out of the store, she bumped into a man by accident. She lowered her head as an apology; but instead of sliding by, the man grasped her wrist and smiled at her.

"I never thought we'd meet again," he said. It was Ito Atsuo. Save for some strands of silver at his temples, he hadn't changed much from his younger years, still handsome and sharp and agile in his white linen suit. Jade couldn't find any words and felt as though she'd break down sobbing if she tried. Instead, she exerted all her strength to maintaining her steely gaze.

"You don't have to cry because you're so happy to see me," Ito said lightheartedly, all the while noticing how thin and bony she'd become. Locks of limp hair escaped helplessly from her chignon and fell around her neck. A husk of the woman she'd been. "Well, what were you doing? Headed somewhere?"

Jade shook her head.

"Good. Come with me, I was about to go to dinner."



It was a damp midsummer evening. The clouded twilight blindfolded the world in a soft gray haze. They made their way to a Japanese restaurant nearby, where the windows were fogged with condensation. Jade sat silently while Ito ordered more than enough food for four people. She didn't understand how the restaurant still had anything to serve, though people like Ito evidently had no trouble keeping on as before. Seated across from him, Jade worked away on her grilled eggplant without further pretense or embarrassment. No matter how much she ate, she felt she could keep going. Only the onset of nausea forced her to reluctantly slow down; she was terrified of vomiting up the precious food.

"Do you know, it's been twenty years since we first met. You were seventeen," he said, taking spare bites of the fried fish. He held his elbow high, archly straining the shoulder of his fitted jacket, emanating a princely indifference to food even while eating with pleasure.

"I was a child. I didn't know anything," she replied, putting down her chopsticks.

"That's true. An obstinate, arrogant little girl. You thought you were smarter than you really were. Like most pretty little girls." He smirked, and Jade blushed. "But you were a fighter. That's why you were different. You bit me once, do you remember? But life has taught you many things since then, I assume."

"I've lost everyone I once loved or cared about." Jade's voice was breaking. "I don't have anything left to fight for."

"Ah. That doesn't matter. You fight until you die—that's what this is about." Ito sipped on his cup of sake. "The war is going very badly. Truthfully I didn't foresee this coming, but we're going to lose. The Americans have all but wiped us out in the Pacific. But the Japanese army will keep fighting until the last remaining soldier is dead."

"And you? You're not afraid?"

"Afraid? No. What for? Every man has to die at some point. I have killed enough people to know that one day, my turn will come. But dying prematurely is the business of small men. And I have a plan." He leaned in close and lowered his voice. "When Japan loses

the war, Korea will gain its independence. And that would mean terrible things for the Japanese living here. I'm going back before that happens." He poured himself another cup of sake.

"You're going back to Tokyo? What about your mines?"

"No, Nagasaki, where my family is originally from. We have a beautiful mansion on the side of a mountain, overlooking the sea. I haven't been back since my father passed away and it's about time I returned. And the government took my mines a long time ago to pay for the war. Fortunately, by that point I'd already invested most of my cash in art and Koryo porcelains. I have acquired over a hundred pieces, each worth at least ten thousand won but some that are many, many times more. They're worth more than the ores at this point, which had begun to run dry anyway. So that's what I'm taking with me."

He sat back in his booth, glancing contentedly at Jade and seeing not her, but his immaculate collection and his similarly immaculate plan. Then, as if remembering something he'd forgotten, he checked his gold-faced watch.

"It's quarter after nine. I have somewhere to be," he said, summoning the waiter and instructing him to pack the rest of the dishes still untouched on the table. "I'm on my way to the ChangGyeong Palace Zoo. That's near your house—I could drop you off."

"The zoo? Why? And so late at night," Jade asked, carefully clutching the parcel of food in her arms.

"I'll tell you in the car," Ito said. His driver, wearing pristine white gloves, was waiting in the front seat, and Ito himself opened the door for Jade before getting in on the other side.

"Where do you still get oil? Not even the military can find it these days," Jade wondered aloud.

Ito laughed. "In some ways, you're still a child," he said, patting her arm playfully. "I know you don't like or trust me, but in the name of time—sheer time that we've known each other, just listen to me. Okay?"

"Okay."

"Don't trust anyone, don't suffer unnecessarily, see the truth behind what people say, and always find a way to survive. That's my advice."

"Why do I have to survive?" Jade asked. "I feel like there's no meaning to it. The world is crumbling down, it's becoming a more evil and dark place every day, and I have no one." She gestured at the muggy scene outside the window, devoid of any streetlamps, music, or moonlight, silence broken only by the rustling of damp leaves.

"You attach too much importance to other people," Ito replied. They were both silent for a while, each unwilling to bend to the other.

"So what are you doing at the zoo?" she asked. Over the past few years, many animals had been starved to death. The inexpensive animals like the rabbits, dogs, and Jejudo horses were fed to the lions and the tigers, and their enclosures were melted down and turned into artillery. A few times, Jade brought a potato, an apple, or half a cabbage to feed the lone elephant, or the brother and sister half-moon bears. Afraid of getting too close, she tossed the food into the enclosure and watched them devour the lackluster vegetable. She thought that they'd looked at her with shockingly human eyes. Knowing, pleading, hopeful.

"Ah. I didn't want to tell you at the restaurant, in case someone overheard and got alarmed," Ito said in his smooth, unwavering voice. "There were orders from Tokyo to prepare for an American airstrike in Seoul in the near future. So the zookeepers are eliminating all the large and dangerous animals tonight, to prevent them from breaking loose."

"But the poor things didn't do anything wrong. So you're going in order to watch them get killed?" Jade was gripped by anger, which returned with renewed force now that she felt more nourished and full.

"Watch them, yes, but mostly to recover what's valuable afterward. I'm particularly interested in a tiger skin, two bear skins, and a set of ivory. The tiger, especially. We don't have any such ferocious beasts in Japan, and we're a far bigger country. How such

enormous beasts have flourished in this little land is incomprehensible. I would have loved to hunt one in the wild—but they're almost certainly extinct now."

Jade remembered the long-ago nights in her village. The darkness had resounded with the cries of hungry animals, and on some snowy mornings she'd woken up to paw prints circling their cottage. But wild beasts had never frightened her—it was the humans who terrified her with their savagery.

"Why do you like death and killing so much?" Jade narrowed her eyes; if she wasn't so dazed from constant physical and spiritual fatigue, she would have burst out crying.

"Oh no, I don't take any special pleasure in watching a magnificent beast get poisoned inside a cage. It seems—unfair. Inelegant. But if it has to die, at least I can recover its hide. The zoo has said it will use the money to feed the remaining animals."

The car rolled to a stop in front of Jade's villa. In spite of her old hatred of Ito and his news about the zoo, she felt compelled to thank him for the food. He shrugged.

"Don't thank me and just remember my advice. I'm leaving on Friday, so this is the last time we're seeing each other . . . Fuck war, and fuck loneliness. Stay alive."

She waited for him to press himself on her, but he merely sat there, smiling coolly. She realized that he didn't want her, the same way he didn't enjoy poisoning a caged tiger. It was not a matter of principle, but of taste. She bowed her head to hide her embarrassed flush.

The next day, Jade received a package from Ito's driver. Inside, there was an envelope of clean bills—thousand won—and a small celadon vase, only slightly taller than the length of her hand, inlaid with dancing cranes over a beautiful shade of jade.

# 24

## Lingonberries

1945

**ON AUGUST 6, THE WHOLE WORLD WOULD CHANGE WITH THE DISCOVERY** that man can ignite the fire of the sun upon the surface of the earth. But Yamada Genzo did not know this in July, when he arrived back in Manchuria to prepare for the inevitable. The troops were in the poorest conditions, ill-clad, ill-shod, and barely fed. They were given a set of ammunition that would last them a day of battle, and no more. Yet, unloosed on the grassy field on a summer's day, they still joked around with each other, bartering cigarettes, washing their clothes, wading into the chilly lake and splashing like children. Here in the peaceful boreal forest, the soldiers were not drawn to the kind of depravity that Yamada had seen in previous campaigns. These troops were not inherently more innocent than any other, nor were his previous soldiers inherently bestial. The earlier troops would have also carved the names of their beloved on the trunks of these trees, if they were here now. These troops, given the same circumstances as in the past, would also slash the throats of women while inside them. In Nanjing Yamada had seen a lieutenant do just that and continue fucking the still-warm dead body. After finishing he turned around and said to Yamada, almost sheepishly, "It's

better.” Yamada considered killing the lieutenant on the spot, but that would have been treason. Rape and murder of the enemies of the Empire were just a natural part of war.

Looking around at his cheerful troops, General Yamada wondered whether they didn’t know the end was approaching, or knew but didn’t care.

\* \* \*

**AT EIGHT O’CLOCK** on August 6, Yamada took his breakfast in front of his own tent. It was bright from five until almost midnight, but the sun was gentler up north. This softer light was shimmering on the surface of the green grass, and far away the peaks of the Khingan mountains loomed blue. There was nothing that showed that a tremendous event had taken place—the instant death of an entire city from a single bomb. Only in the late afternoon did they receive the radio message about Hiroshima, and Yamada still couldn’t make sense of it. How was it possible, to have these light purple flowers swaying in the wind, the turtles swimming lazily in the lake, the trees spreading their branches and straining to grow as much as possible during this heatless summer—and then at the same time, have blinding white light, charred and melting flesh, faceless people in a city of ash? It was utterly senseless, this world—and to act as though it did make sense was the greatest crime. And yet, the decision was made in the commanders’ meeting to continue to prepare for the impending Russian attack, as if nothing had changed.

“Sense!” General Yamada muttered to himself at the table, seated among the regimental commanders and the chiefs of staff. The others looked at him with concern or suspicion, and he lowered his eyes to a tiny black dot on the table. It was an ant, on its eternal mission to hurriedly get and store food; he kept his eyes fixed on it until the meeting ended.

Over the next few days, the regiments whiled away their time mending their gear and writing letters, to be dispatched whenever they would mobilize once more and pass through a town. It was

predicted that the Russians would wait until fall to advance their armies, to replenish the troops worn out from the war in Europe. But on August 9, Yamada's camp received a message from Japan—that another atomic bomb razed Nagasaki to the ground—and another one from their western front—that Russia had declared war on Japan in the twenty-third hour of August 8. The tanks started rolling at midnight, precisely three months after the German surrender.

Yamada's army was set to march to the northwest in order to join the Fourth Army. The soldiers, who had been naively cheerful while they were camped, assumed a solemn air as the morning warmed to a honeyed afternoon. An eerie silence gripped them. It was the kind of quiet that reminds one of childhood summers, of birdsongs, mothers when they were still young and beautiful, and leaves swaying and shimmering in the wind. In the midst of this somnolence, the faintest tremor on the black earth was felt by Yamada. The soldiers exchanged looks as the sound grew, but kept up their march.

Yamada ordered a halt. They were facing northwest, and to their right were the smooth, dark ankles of the Khingan mountains, sloping gently upward to meet the clouds. From their left, the tremor intensified and became a rumble. Over the soft, green grass of the horizon, they could now make out the tanks and the artillery of the Russian army.

They were trapped between the Russians and the hills. There was no choice but to meet them headlong. The commanders and officers rushed to get their troops in formation. Yamada looked around at the soldiers, carrying their worn-out rifles, trying not to show their fear. Many of them, he was sure, were thinking of the letters near their hearts that would never reach their families. It was up to him to rouse their courage, however he could.

"Brave sons of the Empire, now is the time to show what you're made of. For honor, for the motherland, for the Emperor!" He shouted whatever words he thought were appropriate, and the soldiers erupted into a deafening cry, raising their fists over their heads. But it didn't matter what words he chose—it was simply the

fact that he said them to encourage them, and they knew and accepted that intention.

The Russians responded with their own battle cry, reaching them faintly at first, then becoming a tidal wave of sound. Soon they were within shooting range of one another, which both sides seemed to realize at the same time. At once, the ground beside Yamada exploded from the first artillery fire. The Russians were also swept in smoke, but they were still advancing.

"Hold the line! Hold!" Yamada shouted, and the regimental commanders and officers repeated after him. Some of the troops and even some officers fell to the ground. Those in the immediate vicinity suppressed the urge to tend to their wounded and held their positions stoically. Both sides traded rifle shots and lobbed grenades at one another. More explosions, more men engulfed in flames.

The tide turned more quickly than even a seasoned general like Yamada could have predicted. The Russians had far superior weapons; Yamada's army didn't have a single tank or a machine gun. Even in the tangle of a battlefield it was soon clear to Yamada that his army was being massacred. The grass that had been so soft and feathery was quickly being covered in bodies and smoke. Everywhere around Yamada, the dead and the dying lay in piles of flesh and blood. The gunshots were slowing down, spaced farther in between; and some distance away he could see some of his troops and officers on their knees, hands raised over their heads. He was alone, shrouded in gun smoke for the time being, but it was only a matter of time before the Russians would either capture or kill him. In such a situation, the only option left for a general of the Imperial Japanese Army was to end his own life. Instead, Yamada surprised himself by turning around and running with all his strength toward the wooded hills. A minute later, a sudden gust of wind carried away the smoke that had settled on the field. Without turning around, Yamada heard the shouting in Russian. He sprinted until his lungs felt like bursting, and the shouts turned to gunshots.

*Bang! Bang!* The sound sailed straight across the field, and he could almost feel the bullets piercing his back. He knew they'd missed only because his legs kept running. The thicket at the edge



of the woods was just fifty or so yards away, then forty, then thirty . . .

*BANG! BANG! BANG!* He heard the last three shots, louder than before, certain that at least one bullet had hit him just before reaching the woods. He thought, So this is how it feels to die . . .

\* \* \*

**IT WAS CLEAR,** from the heavy whiteness of the sky and the dampness of the wind, that there would be snow.

Yamada was crouching in his cove, a little triangular shelf made by a flat rock below two rocks leaning into each other. It was just high enough for him to sit inside with a straight back, and long enough so he could lie down fully stretched. He sat facing the bare-branched trees and the forest floor blanketed in yellow and red-brown leaves. Soon, that softening layer would disappear; there had already been light flurries in the past few weeks. So far, the snow was melting within a day of falling. But if it started to stick around for longer, Yamada wouldn't be able to forage for berries and mushrooms.

He was already so thin that he could close his thumb and middle finger around his elbow. His uniform drooped around his frame as though on a clothes hanger. It had kept him from freezing until now, but every day and every night it got colder in the woods. Even at this low elevation, winter would come quicker this far up north. It was, in fact, already here. The birds were long gone, and the rodents and the hares too were quiet.

Yamada crawled his way out of the cove and shakily stood up on the spongy ground. Though he wanted to stay inside and conserve his strength, his hunger was still the greater force within him. Not far from the stream there was a glade full of wild lingonberry bushes, surrounded by a ring of white birch trees. He limped his way to the stream, shivering continuously from the cold. On his way there, snow started falling softly, as though someone had tipped over a giant saltcellar in the sky. It was that kind of dry, fine, powdery snow.

At the stream, Yamada carefully knelt on a rock, cupped his two hands together, and drank from it. There were paw prints on the deep brown earth nearby; the animals of the forest also came here for water. Yamada remembered in a daze the times when he would have jumped at the opportunity to hunt those beasts. It seemed impossible now that he had once been strong enough to run, to chase, to kill. He had liked hunting, not as people like Hayashi or even Ito do with sensual pleasure, but because it was what he had to do to become a great man of the world. He contemplated the irony that he now was a nobody of the most forsaken corner of the world, unseen and unheard by anyone. No one would miss him, certainly not Mineko and perhaps not even Ito Atsuo. He pictured Ito holding court over a company of wealthy men, holding a glass of cognac and saying, "My oldest friend, General Yamada Genzo, died in the war. He was a true hero worthy of His Majesty. To his memory!" And immediately afterward, moving on to whatever topic he was truly interested in at the moment, whether it was a woman or a piece of art or a gold mine. That would be the last Ito ever talked about Yamada. He knew what kind of a person Ito was inside.

It seemed clear to Yamada that his life was of the smallest consequence imaginable.

The fine, salt-like snow was turning larger and more fierce. Yamada rose and started limping his way over to the glade. The thought of lingonberries wet his mouth and ripped his insides, but he had no strength to move any quicker. Every joint in his wretched body hurt, as if parts that didn't fit together had been jammed in by force. Snow started falling thicker and getting into his eyes, so that he had to stop after every ten steps to wipe them away.

Still, he finally managed to get to the glade by midday. But once there, Yamada was disappointed to discover that so much of the berries and even leaves were gone since the last time. Deer, elk, or some other beasts had also visited the clearing for food. Yamada went from shrub to shrub, carefully examining each stem. In one or two of the plants, some shriveled-up berries were hidden beneath a layer of snow. He greedily put them in his mouth, and the sour-

sweetness spread from his tongue and even summoned a tiny bit of warmth in his body.

He ate two handfuls of berries in about an hour, and turned back toward the cove. But he had gone only a few steps before realizing that everything looked different under a thick blanket of snow. All the markers he'd used to find his way in the forest were buried. He went twenty steps forward and then turned back for another ten steps, and repeated these circles while the snow continued to fall. He couldn't stop shaking. He had never felt so cold for so long in his life.

He crouched down on the ground, too weak to keep walking. Once in that posture, he couldn't resist the temptation to lie down. So he stretched himself out, the forest floor as the bed, and the falling snow as the blanket on top of him. It was strange how he finally felt warm and comfortable in this position. That's when he thought of that image, so many years ago, when he found a man lying like this on the snow, in the mountains a thousand miles away. The corpse-like man, impossibly gaunt and in tattered clothes. He hadn't realized then that his life would change because of that moment, but the inevitability of everything that had since come to pass overwhelmed him in waves of crystalline consciousness. The events had taken place at once rationally and irrationally, defying logic and arriving at the correct destination nonetheless. Even the most difficult question, the Why, seemed to dissolve cleanly in the sky.

"It all makes sense," he whispered to himself, or perhaps merely thought. It was no longer clear if words could leave his throat, or just floated around inside his head. There was no one to hear if he'd actually made a sound. It didn't matter; Yamada was finally at peace.

# 25

## Republic

1945

**IT WAS THE COLORFUL LIGHT FILTERING THROUGH THE STAINED GLASS** ceiling that woke JungHo. He had been hiding in a safe house, an abandoned chapel that was kept from demolition simply due to negligence. Since it was supposed to be empty, JungHo had been careful not to make any noises or movements. He never went out, surviving only on food dropped off once a week by MyungBo's servant.

He stood next to the clear-glass window, which was laced with a spiderweb crack around a bullet hole. The sky outside was the warm, energetic blue of a hot summer day. He put a finger through the bullet hole, the jagged edge cutting into his skin and drawing tiny droplets of blood. He inhaled deeply; there was something different in the air outside. His throat closed with longing. Like someone hypnotized, JungHo pulled on his clothes and walked out of the chapel.

The streets, whitewashed by the sun directly overhead, were eerily empty of people. JungHo walked alone for a few blocks before passing by a couple of laborers—not digging and bagging sand, but squatting on the ground and chatting.

"Pardon me, what's the date today?" JungHo asked them. His voice trembled with the effort to roll his tongue, stiffened from disuse.

"It's the fifteenth of August," one of the men replied. JungHo nodded; being alone for so long, he had lost the exact count of the days earlier in the summer.

"Is something the matter? Where is everyone?" JungHo asked again, shielding his eyes from the sun with his hand.

"Why, we're wondering the same thing, young fellow. The officer in charge never showed up this morning and most people went home . . ." the man said, eyeing JungHo's bleeding finger and leaning back warily. JungHo nodded at them in thanks and walked on. For the first time in JungHo's memory, there were no officers, gendarmes, or policemen on the streets.

A young man burst out of an alley to JungHo's right, shouting at the top of his lungs and rupturing the heady silence.

"Japan has surrendered!" his voice rang. "Korea is independent!"

"The Japanese emperor has surrendered!" Someone else echoed his words, unseen. The words had to sink into JungHo's mind for a second before he realized this had to be true.

Like a dam breaking at the last raindrop, people poured out onto the streets with breathtaking speed. JungHo was soon surrounded by hundreds, then thousands, then tens of thousands of people, embracing, singing, crying, and shouting *manseh*. Strangers were no longer strangers, recognizing souls in one another's faces. An enveloping feeling of love so sharp as to be painful ran through JungHo's being. Who or what this passion was for, it was unclear—maybe that was the nature of the greatest love. Unable to suppress the feeling, he cried out. In this moment, weeping in ecstasy, he realized that he had never before known true happiness. His throat choked with saltiness and his eyes clouded with tears, and he willingly lost himself to this desperate joy, this freedom.

The white-hot sun warmed to a fiery orange, then the stars rose like mist over the heat of the earth. The celebrations went on all night as, one by one, political inmates were released from jails and prisons. When the crowd finally dispersed, JungHo headed to

MyungBo's house, where his mentor embraced him like a son. Activists from all walks of life kept coming and going until sunrise.

By morning, the Japanese emperor's surrender announcement had reached even the most remote provinces, and the whole country knew unmistakably that they were independent. The cheers and cries on the streets were deafening, and made it impossible to just sit at home and not join in. JungHo walked out of MyungBo's house without any fear for the first time in twenty years. He was not a beggar or a wanted man—only a man just like anyone else. Every part of society, from Rightists, Leftists, gentlemen, paupers, students, to even butchers and prostitutes, was reveling freely as equals.

Among the crowd dressed in their best clothes and waving homemade *taegukgi* flags, he spotted a woman and did a double take. She looked haggard, bloated, and old beyond her years—much older even than JungHo—but there was still something in her face that reminded him of the ten-year-old courtesan apprentice that he once knew. It was Lotus.

**"JUNGHO! YOU'RE BACK!" JADE SHRIEKED**, pulling the gate wide open and jumping up and down. "Oh god, let me take a look at you. I thought I'd never see you again!"

Jade was still reaching toward him when she realized how coldly he stared at her. Her smile faded and gave way to dismay. For a moment she'd believed that he'd come to forgive her and celebrate the independence. The reason for their fallout no longer existed; he would never have to risk his life again, and so she wouldn't be asked to give her opinion on it. But with JungHo's silence, she realized that they would never become friends again. Her face burned, and she was deeply conscious of how homely she looked. Her hair was dull and more than a little gray, and her hands were knotted with veins. Perhaps JungHo could have been won over if she'd been a little less washed out.

"I've only come to take you to Lotus," he said at last. "Grab your jacket."

He led Jade to a squalid patch in YongSan, where rank brothels had sprouted like sores along the side of the hill. There, among half-naked women cursing one another and washing their underclothes, Lotus was sitting listlessly with long, disheveled hair, humming a song from the twenties. When she saw Jade, they both burst into tears and ran to hug each other.

Jade tried to bring Lotus home at that moment, but the fat madame with rings on all her fingers stepped in front of them.

"Not a chance. She owes five years' worth of room, board, and clothing. And she definitely hasn't paid much of it back. Just look at her—only a real dog would sleep with such an ugly bitch." The madame shot a hideous look at Lotus, who was cowering next to Jade.

"If you say one more word, I will kill you," JungHo said, not menacingly—just simply and professionally as he used to do in the old days. "Unless you want to die today, shut up and step aside."

"No, no, JungHo." Jade took him by the arm. "There's no need for that. So, how much does she owe?"

"Ah, you see, I took her in just when things went from bad to terrible, and kept her fed and alive all through the war," the madame said with a suddenly ingratiating tone. "And eat well, she did. She would have starved to death without me . . ."

"I said, how much does she owe?" Jade asked coldly.

"Five hundred won," the madame said with the hopeful, greedy look of a vendor about to swindle an idiot. Out in the countryside, she could easily buy a fresh, fifteen-year-old virgin for just a hundred won. "You see, that might sound like a lot, but the upkeep was insanely costly, and her debt accrued interest. Perhaps you can pay two hundred and fifty won up front, and the remainder with interest . . ."

"Here, this is five hundred won," Jade said, pulling out crisp bills from her handbag. It was half of the money Ito had given her. The madame's mouth dropped in surprise, then pursed in anger that she'd vastly lowballed her price. In her shabby linen blouse and skirt, Jade hadn't looked like a rich woman.

"Come, Lotus, let's go." Jade wrapped her arm around her friend and JungHo followed protectively behind them, but not without shooting one final deadly glare at the madame.

**ONCE JUNGHO TOOK HIS LEAVE** in front of their house, Jade found it hard to say anything to her friend. Lotus didn't seem ready to talk, either. Jade helped her take a bath, not saying much more than "is it warm enough or shall I pour more hot water?"

After Lotus had put on some clean clothes, she broke the silence. "Where's Aunt Dani?"

Jade took a deep breath. The fact that someone thought Dani was still here made her feel, in fact, strangely alive. Maybe you only really died when no one assumed you were still living. Maybe not telling Lotus was a way to keep Dani in this world a little longer.

"She was very ill for a long time. She passed away—it's been almost four years," Jade said, her eyes warm and her nose pungent. She quietly rose and brought out the reliquary from the wardrobe. Lotus started weeping, quietly at first and then like a child, gasping and shuddering.

"I thought she was invincible. How could she die? How?" Lotus repeated, stroking the wooden reliquary with one hand and mopping her red face with the other. Once the tears broke, she didn't seem able to stop herself—and Jade knew that she was crying not just for Dani, but also for everything that had happened. She cried with abandon, with determination. She cried like a woman who needed to dissolve in order to be remade.

But even through the renewed tears, Jade's heart was lighter than it had been in years. That night, they slept in the same room, as they had when they were little girls, and Lotus confided in her all that had passed since they last saw each other. The one good thing about the war, Lotus said, was that without any opium in the market, she had been forced to become clean. She had almost died in the process, but she no longer smoked.

In the days that followed, Jade noticed that Lotus sagged underneath clothes and looked tired no matter the time of day. Yet little by little, Lotus was regaining herself. She sang songs—not from



her brilliant yet brief career, but the ones they had to learn by heart to pass the first year of courtesan school.

"I like beginnings, Jade. Remember the beginning of our lives together?" she said, and Jade reached over and patted her shoulder. "That was such a wonderful time, but all we wanted to do was grow up as quickly as possible."

Shortly after Lotus's return, more good news came in the form of a letter from Luna. Correspondences between Korea and America had ceased during the war, and Jade hadn't heard from her since she left.

Luna had lived in Washington, D.C., and New York City in the first years of her marriage. Then she became pregnant, and shortly afterward the family moved to San Francisco. Her son's name was John Junior and he was eight already. Americans marveled that he took precisely half from Curtice, and half from Luna: he had his father's large frame and prominent nose and his mother's milky skin and soft black eyes. Hesook was a nurse, married to a navy officer who had been her patient at the military hospital.

Jade and Lotus giggled over the family photo enclosed in the letter, and marveled that little Hesook had become such a beautiful woman. She looked like the exact copy of Luna at that age, only less sad and more determined.

After all the news about her family, Luna wrote:

*My beloved Jade, during these years of war, I have spent so many sleepless nights worrying about you, my mother, Aunt Dani, and Lotus. To know that my family is suffering there while I'm safe in America has been my greatest sorrow. I have spoken to my husband about it and he agrees with me. Fortunately he can bring people here better than anyone, and he says for now, we can get one person an American visa as my family member. I already know my mother won't want to come. To leave her Pyongyang and live in a foreign land—just after her country has regained its independence, her lifelong dream—would be unthinkable. But Aunt Dani has longed to live abroad her entire life. And though she's an aunt strictly speaking, she's been like a second mother to me.*

Jade stopped reading this aloud and exchanged dark looks with Lotus.

"How funny life is, that Auntie could have gone to America if she'd have lived a bit longer," Jade murmured.

"Well, she's not here anymore. But I am," Lotus said eagerly. "I could rebuild my life there. I'm so sick of this godforsaken country!"

It struck Jade how Lotus often blamed the entire path of her life on the circumstances of the country. In the weeks since she had returned to the villa, she had shown an avid interest in the misfortunes of others—not because she was malevolent, but because she felt vindicated in her own powerlessness. Upon learning that the beautiful, adulterous painter from Café Seahorn had committed suicide in the final days of the war, Lotus had even looked immensely relieved. Now, Luna's letter offered a chance to escape the country that brought on her downfall and to start again halfway across the world.

Jade wondered how Lotus could still be so hopeful after all she had been through. Jade herself could never have the courage to leave everything behind—or to believe that something better was still ahead. That was Lotus's strength, not her own. Jade was content to not reach for anything new in her life. She had had enough heartbreaks.

**NINE MONTHS LATER, LOTUS LEFT** InCheon on a steamer, all her possessions packed densely in a wooden trunk that was far too heavy for her to carry alone. Her burdensome luggage was brimming with necessities, food, new clothes gifted by Jade, a few sentimental objects, and a lot of hope—but somehow, once she arrived at her new home, she would realize that she had somehow missed the most essential, obvious toiletries or linens. Most new coats, dresses, and hats, specially ordered after much forethought, would be somehow unsuitable in the new country—too heavy, too light, or simply unfashionable. They would languish unworn, and when taken out of the attic years later, they would make the heart tight with pain. But they did not know this just now. Looking at Lotus's tiny figure waving joyfully from the deck, Jade believed that only good things were now ahead of her—a great peace, like the name of the ocean she was about to cross. Through the crashing waves and the

wails of the seagulls, the faintest trace of Lotus's laughter could still be heard. Despite everything that had happened between them, Jade felt she would recognize that subtle shape of the body anywhere and her mind would be filled with the word *friend*. As the sea opened up between them, they went from using just their hands to swaying their arms high over their heads. *I see you, I still see you*. Jade thought: if you really love someone you say goodbye without ever leaving. Neither of them stopped waving until the other became a dot and disappeared over the horizon.

\* \* \*

**"SO WHO CAN TELL ME** what the four emotions are?" Jade looked around at the ten-year-old dancers in her class. Several hands shot up in the air.

"Mija." Jade pointed at the girl near the back.

"It's joy, anger, sadness, and pleasure," Mija said, eyes sparkling. Jade smiled, walked to the chalkboard, and added a point to Mija's group. The girls giggled.

"Yes, those are the four classic emotions that art—including traditional dance—expresses."

"But, Teacher! What about love?" Mija asked.

"Love?" Jade considered a moment. For her, love was everything in dance. But how she really felt was too painful to talk about with ten-year-olds.

Instead she said: "Does one sometimes feel angry or sad because of love? Does one feel joy and pleasure because of love?" And the children oohed and ahed excitedly. Their admiration of their teacher knew no bounds. That was her favorite thing about teaching at the Koryo Arts School for Girls: her pupils. They were the reason she stayed in Seoul when half the people around her seemed to be going north.

When Japan surrendered, the Americans coming north from the Pacific and the Soviets coming south from Manchuria finally met on the little peninsula and drew a hasty line at the thirty-eighth parallel. The Koreans had wanted their country to remain one, as it had for

the previous thirteen hundred years; their wish was ignored, and henceforth the peninsula was divided into North and South.

All her life, Jade had never concerned herself too much with politics; she had left that to people like Dani and JungHo. (They were both naturally contentious and obsessed with justice—and more alike than they could ever have realized.) But even Jade could see that this North-South division was leading to staggering chaos. Seoul had long harbored Nationalists, Communists, Anarchists, Christians of all denominations, Buddhists, and Cheondoists, many of whom put aside their differences and collaborated under the same goal of independence. Once that was achieved, however, some of them realized they were standing on the wrong side of the line. Several artists Jade knew from those jazz years left for the North. At first, it was easy to cross the border, just like passing from Seoul to InCheon. Eventually the border was closed and guard posts installed, and people disappeared without telling their neighbors and friends, walking across the misty field on a moonless night.

Jade didn't have any real friends left in Seoul. She hadn't heard from JungHo since he'd brought her to Lotus. Months later, she found out through the town gossip that he had married a seventeen-year-old girl, a daughter of a successful restaurant owner named Choi YoungGu, who was also apparently JungHo's childhood friend. Jade's stomach dropped when she heard the news, she hated every aspect of it.

The girl is twenty-five years younger than him. But it's not my business—I am glad he has found his match, she said to herself.

Without Lotus, Luna, JungHo, and Dani, the only family she had left was Silver, who was still living in PyongYang with her faithful servant. Jade figured that her foster mother was in her sixties but that Stoney must be at least ten years older. Soon, he would die and Jade would become the only person who could take care of Silver in her old age. And yet, the house that she grew up in was in Seoul, and with it all the memories she'd made. She had her job at Koryo Arts School that the new government founded, and she liked the work. There were guard posts and checkpoints, but no barbed wire fence stretching from the East Sea to the West Sea. If Silver became

ill, she could always go up to PyongYang to see her. Jade decided to stay in Seoul for the time being.

\* \* \*

**AS A BOY READING THE CLASSICS** by Confucius and Mencius, HanChol had been taught that life was a road. Walk the straight line, go the way of the gentleman, a journey of a thousand miles begins with one step, they'd said. But now, he knew that life was actually a wheel. It could take you places if you were smart about it. If you were foolish or merely unfortunate, it could crush you. Between those two extremes, most people labored to push the wheel along. Even what they thought of as respite or pleasure, such as eating or sleeping or fucking or having children, was just rolling the wheel forward without being conscious of it. They only truly stopped when they died.

HanChol once had a dream of his old rickshaw, its oversize wheels spinning faster and faster. His heart was pounding because he had to run to keep the wheels turning. But also, the wheels were just behind him and he had to sprint to avoid getting crushed. Then he entered a cave at the foot of a mountain and the wheels disappeared. A bird appeared by his side and he knew it was a friendly guide. He followed it through the pitch-black underground tunnel, and when he came out on the other side, he was in a valley suffused in a halcyon glow. He woke up feeling as though he were still bathed in golden light, blessed by an unknown power.

Sometimes, when some extraordinary event occurred, the wheel turned on its side and spun in order to determine everyone's fates. At the end of the war, it slowed down and eventually stopped, showing who would win and who would lose.

As HanChol sat in the crowded courtroom waiting for his father-in-law, he reflected on the wins and losses of his own life. Just before the war, he'd become the owner of the biggest auto garage in the entire country. Even after the war started, he had benefited from the influx of military trucks that needed repairs. But just a year later, the Japanese confiscated his garage overnight and melted down

whatever metal that could be found inside. In the last throes of the war, HanChol had nothing to do except live off of his father-in-law's seemingly untouchable wealth and privilege. He was mortified and ashamed of being so dependent, but SeoHee always reassured him that nothing made her father happier than seeing his children safe and sound. He, HanChol, was also a son, not a son-in-law.

When the war ended and Korea was liberated, HanChol set immediately to the task of rebuilding his garage. He was determined not to ask his father-in-law for support—and surprisingly, help came from where he least expected. His Andong relatives reached out to him with the news that his father's first cousin had died without heirs or younger brothers. He, HanChol, was the closest living male relative to that bloodline, a prosperous one heading an estate of nearly ten thousand *suk* of rice a year. All HanChol needed to do to claim it was to be formally adopted by the cousin's widow. With his own mother's blessing, HanChol became the son of a woman he'd never before met and used his new income to rebuild his company. He had even grander ambitions than before. Not only would he repair cars, but he would also find a way to produce them from scratch. Now that he'd survived the war and become stronger, HanChol was even more irrevocably convinced of his abilities. On the whole he tried to remain as humble and meticulous as he'd always been, but the gleaming black eyes framed by energetically raised eyebrows betrayed his new confidence.

His father-in-law, however, had found a different sort of change at the war's end, HanChol thought as he caught sight of Kim SungSoo entering the courtroom between two policemen. SungSoo was wearing one of his fine wool suits rather than a white *hanbok* robe that other defendants preferred. He looked distinguished and proud with his full head of silvery white hair. The people whispered and clicked their tongues in disapproval, but SungSoo didn't seem in the least bit concerned.

"All rise for the Honorable Judge \_\_\_\_\_," someone announced, unseen behind rows of black and gray heads. The judge was an unexceptional-looking old man in jet-black robes, which shocked some ignorant peasants in attendance for bearing too great of a

resemblance to mourning clothes. Rising and sitting back down with the crowd, HanChol noticed how he wasn't in the least nervous for his father-in-law and lashed himself with a tiny flick of guilt.

The judge called upon the prosecutor, a young man in a dark pinstripe suit. The charges against Kim SungSoo were long and grave: the defendant was a lifelong Japanese collaborator, whose uncle was made a count by the abominable Governor-General Ito Hirobumi himself. Kim's father avoided his estate being confiscated by colluding with the Japanese. Kim himself was no better, being close friends with the police chief of Jongno station, Japanese military men, and the like. He supplied the Japanese army with funds almost until the day of the surrender. That was the sole reason he had managed to survive the war unscathed. The prosecutor spoke with genuine emotion, shaking his fist in the direction of the defendant—whose head was proudly erect—and the spectators clucked their tongues even louder. "These bastards must all be put to death by quartering," said a thick rustic voice somewhere in the middle of the room, rather loudly so all could hear. People around him murmured in agreement.

It was clear that the courtroom was against Kim SungSoo. But HanChol still felt no fear on behalf of his father-in-law, the grandfather of his three children (SeoHee was at home, heavily pregnant with the fourth), the man who had raised him up from abject poverty.

The judge called forth Kim SungSoo's lawyer, a plump and pale man wearing thick round glasses and a purple bow tie. He looked around contemptuously at the audience before beginning.

"Your Honor, it would be easy to give in to the worst instincts of humanity when we have just been released from shackles, but it wouldn't be just. We have heard about Kim SungSoo's relatives' crimes, and yes, his uncle was a traitor to be sure. But he died years ago—and is it fair to punish a man for his uncle's sins? Aside from the fact that Kim SungSoo had a social relationship with policemen and gendarmes, nothing has been proven of his own guilt or treachery. Kim had to pretend to like those men in order to self-

preserve—and if we punished every man who ever got along with the Japanese, who would be left alive in this country?

“Contrary to accusations, Kim SungSoo was in fact a patriot who worked tirelessly to bring our country’s independence. His outward friendship with the Japanese was solely to elude suspicion,” the lawyer stated, rocking back and forth on his polished leather shoes. The audience murmured angrily. “What a dog!” a man shouted from the back; it was unclear whether he meant the defendant or his attorney.

“Objection, Your Honor,” the prosecutor cut in, but the judge raised his right hand and the lawyer went on, smiling.

“I have the evidence of the defendant’s patriotic activity,” he said, walking to his corner. When he turned back around, he was holding something rectangular and dark in his hands. At a glance it looked like a small box that women use to hold their jewelry.

“This is the wooden block Kim SungSoo used to make ten thousand Korean flags for March first. For the past thirty years, he had kept this in a hidden alcove in the basement of his publishing house.”

The lawyer raised up the wooden block high over his head and displayed it first to the judge, then to the jury, then finally to the audience. The whorls in its center were still stained dark red and night blue. A hush fell upon them.

“If he had been caught, he would have been imprisoned or even executed. Who among you have risked your life so bravely for this country?” The lawyer went on fiercely, though he already knew he was going to win. He was so sure, in fact, that he’d begun thinking about his dinner. The tide had turned.

In less than an hour, Kim SungSoo was pronounced a free and innocent man, and HanChol was glad to be able to return to his normal life.

\* \* \*

**MYUNGBO BELIEVED IN *INYEON***—human thread—and that connections and encounters between people were preordained. The



best and most important *inyeons* were between husband and wife, and parent and child. Those bonds do not break even beyond the pale, he knew for a very long time now. What he was just beginning to understand was that hateful *inyeon* could also last so many years. He had a decades-old contempt for the pro-American Rightists, who showed a servile admiration for that country by adopting English names and speaking with tobacco-scented nostalgia for times spent at Princeton or Georgetown. Before the war, some of them had even appealed to the United States to govern Korea as its protectorate, which MyungBo found impossible to forgive.

As soon as his dream of independence came true, he realized with a vague sense of dread that all of his political rivals had been appointed to the government of the new Republic. But MyungBo still believed he had nothing to fear. For all of his intelligence, it was beyond MyungBo's capacity to understand the distinct species of humanity whose defining trait is the desire for power.

Even when he awoke one night to the terrible knocking on his gates, the pounding of the fists so incongruous against the silky calm of the white moon, he couldn't believe that after all he'd been through he would die at the hands of his own countrymen. He reassured his weeping wife that he had done nothing wrong. Because he was so gentle and confident, the policemen hesitated to put handcuffs on him, and waited with their heads bowed while he put on his suit and said goodbye to his family.

"There's clearly been some mistake. I will be back in a day or two at most. Take good care of your mother while I'm gone." He smiled at his son, and carefully limped out of the gate. He forbade the family and the servants from seeing him out, so they just stood in the courtyard as his silhouette was quickly swallowed by darkness. When he was sure of being out of their sight, MyungBo held out his hands behind his back and felt the cold metal close around his wrists. He breathed in the night air and was surprised to discover a brief, sharp pang of exhilaration. It was just the feeling of being awake at that hour between the deepest night and the earliest morning. He was reminded of being sixteen or so and staying up all night to read a book, more awake and alive than in the middle of the

day. He was sure then of having his entire life ahead of him, and the fresh and smoky smell of 4:00 A.M. had filled him with senseless happiness. Now he was a crippled man with snow-white hair—and the years had passed in the blink of an eye. The meaning of old age was that all the bliss in one's life must now be found looking backward, not forward. But he had played his part, he'd lived for something greater than himself.

The sun rose in the new Republic just as he was locked in his third-story cell. The window was not so high, and he could see the tiled roofs and bare-branched trees shimmering in the orange light, and the birds singing and gliding across the sky. This, the everlasting stillness of morning, brought him unbearable joy and sorrow. Tears flowed down his cheeks raked by time. Death was such a small price to pay for life.

## **Part IV**

**1964**

# 26

## Hourglass

1964

**IN KIM HANCHOL'S HOUSE, EVERY SINGLE DAY BEGAN WITH A FAMILY** breakfast at 6:00 A.M. That was when he sat down at the head of the dining table, while his wife laid out the individual bowls of rice, soup, blanched and dressed spinach, young fiddlehead fern, gingery radish, mackerel simmered in soy sauce, egg roulade, kimchi stew, and the like. His two daughters helped their mother set the table with silver spoons, chopsticks, and cups of barley tea. His three sons sat near him in respectful silence and waited for the female members to sit down. No one began eating until he said, with firm benevolence, "*Ja, mukja*"—here, let's eat.

After breakfast, the housekeeper cleared the table while his wife fetched his coat and briefcase. He only called her *yeobo*. To others, he referred to her as "my wife" or "my children's mother," and was almost never reminded of her name, SeoHee. They'd been married twenty-three years and it was impossible to think of her as the shiny-haired sixteen-year-old she'd been when they'd met. Underneath her tidy apron, her breasts sagged and her stomach strained uncomfortably against her skirt. Only her slim and straight calves with their tiny ankles had retained their girlishness. She knew

this and wore knee-length skirts even in the coldest days of the winter.

"*Yeobo*, come home early," she said as he used a shoehorn to slide into his shoes. It was just her normal greeting, and didn't mean he needed to actually come home earlier.

"I know *yeobo*," he said as usual, wrapping her in a brief hug before walking out.

The graveled path leading out from the front door of the house was covered lightly in frost. HanChol was reminded of something as his feet crunched on the ice, but couldn't remember what, exactly. It was still quite dark at 6:30 A.M. and he found his way carefully to his car. The windshield had frosted over too; HanChol brushed it away with his gloved hands and got into the driver's seat.

Of course, he was well able to afford a chauffeur. After the Korean War ended, he had won numerous construction deals to rebuild entire neighborhoods in Seoul. That led to more contracts even in other cities—the whole country needed to be resurrected. Then his father-in-law passed away, leaving his vast fortune to HanChol. In just over ten years since the war's end, HanChol had become one of the richest people in the South. But he still preferred to drive himself. He didn't want to become one of those lazy men that he so disliked as a rickshaw driver, many years ago.

His was the only car on the road to InCheon, a dark gray line between light gray seas of fallow barley fields. The moon was still stenciled over the western sky when he arrived at the factory. His chief of staff met him at the entrance, his baggy bomber jacket and twill pants giving him a scarecrowish look. They went over HanChol's schedule for the day; there was an interview with a magazine reporter at 2:00 P.M. and a dinner meeting with a lieutenant general, who was a trusted confidant of President Park.

"Did you make a reservation?" HanChol asked, taking off his gloves and stuffing them in his pockets. Inside the factory, there were already dozens of workers moving efficiently over the assembly lines.

"Yes, it's at nine P.M. at MyungWol," the chief of staff said courteously but without overeagerness. HanChol appreciated that

about this young aide; he liked to see some dignity and spine in his subordinates.

“Good, good.” HanChol nodded. MyungWol had been rebuilt after the Korean War in the Western style. Instead of sitting on the heated stone floor covered in golden wax paper, the guests now lounged on ornately carved Italian chairs under crystal chandeliers. The courtesans in braided chignons and voluminous silk skirts were also gone. Now the women, called hostesses, wore tight, low-cut gowns and hair improbably rolled and lifted above the crown.

“What happened to the crankshafts? They were supposed to be here on Monday.” HanChol made his way across the factory floor, his aide dutifully following behind him.

“We got the shipment in last night,” the aide answered, and they walked in silence the rest of the way to the workstation where he would be briefed on the latest prototype.

HanChol only frowned to signal his displeasure—his suppliers were all too prone to late deliveries. In the past, he would have snapped at his aide and considered punishing the subcontractor with reduced orders. But these days he was far less given to impatience over such delays. He had learned that if something was meant to happen, it would happen no matter what, sooner or later. The reverse was also true, so frightfully true. This made him act generously to those people who would not *happen* on the scale that he had, no matter how much they tried. People like his suppliers, employees, his quietly diligent aide. As a matter of fact, most people he knew fell into this category, except his military and political connections.

At the station, his engineers were waiting to show him the most recent tweaks to the engine, and seeing its gleaming iron pistons and cylinders, all so perfectly formed and in sync with one another, resting in immaculate silence and contained energy, HanChol had the distinct impression that he was looking inside his own heart.

\* \* \*

**JADE HAD SLEPT** only a few hours that cold December night. When the sky began to get lighter, she wrapped herself in a thick sweater and stood on the portico, waiting for the sunrise.

The day before, the fellow teachers at her school were gossiping in the faculty lounge about the latest batch of arrests. Jade usually stayed out of these conversations. The others were well-born women who had studied piano and ballet in England, France, and America. Jade knew that they sometimes mixed in foreign phrases so that she wouldn't understand what they were saying.

"Five assemblymen, on charges of communism and espionage. One has even been accused of being sent by Kim Il-Sung to assassinate the president . . ." The piano teacher arched her eyebrows, folding the newspaper in half. Ever since a North Korean spy had crossed the border and made his way to the Blue House a few years back, even longtime politicians were being exposed as impostors and secret agents.

"But I doubt that it's true. How many more people have to be arrested before this stops?" she finished under her breath.

"You shouldn't say that," the ballet teacher whispered, looking anxiously over her shoulder at Jade. "At any rate, one of them was definitely a member of the Communist Party back in the colonial period—this Nam JungHo fellow."

"What did you say?" Jade blurted out loud from her corner, and the piano teacher passed her the newspaper.

"Anyone you know?" the ballet teacher asked, folding her arms below her chest and feigning kindness.

"No, not really," Jade said. She merely glanced at the paper and put it down. But all the strength was drained out of her body, and she exerted the entire force of her will to appearing normal the rest of the day.

As soon as she got home, she undressed and lay under the covers. She hadn't heard from JungHo since they had brought Lotus home together. She had thanked him warmly and asked him to come to dinner, and he had declined with cool politeness. After that, he never again showed up to check on her. It was clear that he no longer wanted anything to do with Jade. Yet, he had been her truest

friend over the years. He'd saved her life more than once, and in more ways than one.

Jade only knew one way she could save JungHo now. She would have to ask help from the most powerful person still connected to her—she'd have to talk to *him*. As the sun warmed the frozen courtyard, she was remembering how she'd told him long ago that she believed in his success before anyone else. She hated herself for having been so naive and good-intentioned; she hated life for proving her right.

\* \* \*

**AROUND NOON, HANCHOL DROVE BACK** to the office in Seoul and had a quick lunch. He asked his chief of staff about the itinerary of his upcoming business trips to Hong Kong, Bangkok, and London. Then it was time to look over bank documents. While he was cross-checking the statements to the bookkeeping, the chief of staff poked his head in and announced that the reporter had arrived.

HanChol raised his head from the files and was mildly surprised to see that the reporter was a woman. She had short, poofy hair and her small lips were painted a very pale beige. Below a tan turtleneck sweater, she was wearing red wide-legged trousers.

"Please, have a seat." HanChol showed her to the sofa, and sank down on his own club chair across from a glass-topped coffee table. The reporter sat, crossed her legs, and laid her notepad on her lap.

"So, Chairman Kim, it's an honor to meet you in person," she said, blushing slightly across her rather pointy nose. "I studied your companies in my economics class in college."

"That makes me feel old." HanChol smiled.

"Oh no, that's not what I meant." The reporter opened her eyes wide. "I'm excited to hear about how you made this happen in such a short time. To rise out of the destruction of the Korean War and actually become even more successful . . . And creating the first-ever automobile manufacturing company in Korea. Have you always known that this is what you wanted to do?"



"Yes, I would say so." HanChol cocked his head thoughtfully. "When I was in my teens, I worked as a rickshaw driver to pay my school fees. Then I moved on to working at a bike repair shop in my twenties. Even then, I knew I could figure out how cars work and how they're put together. No one would have believed me then. But life has a way of working out if you just believe in yourself."

"That's incredible," the reporter gushed. "So, it's about vision, it's about confidence."

HanChol nodded, brushing his hair back from his forehead. He still had a full head of hair, only it was more white than black.

"My next question is, how can someone have confidence? It seems like some people are simply born with a stronger sense of self-esteem, doesn't it? Were you always so sure of your own abilities?"

"Oh, confidence isn't something you're born with. If you have it from the beginning, it means you're a fool," HanChol said slowly, organizing his thoughts. "There are just two things in the world that give you true confidence. One is overcoming difficulties on your own, and the other is being deeply loved. If you experience both, then you will be confident for the rest of your life."

HanChol was definitely not a sentimental man, but even so, he couldn't help feeling a bit wistful about the past. Out the window, a cold and dry gale was whipping through the new buildings, those cylinders and cubes of concrete and steel. The slender brown trees danced, and men and women pulled down their hats and wrapped their coats more tightly around them, leaning forward as they walked against the wind.

The reporter continued to ask him about his beginnings, how he started his own auto repair shop in the colonial period, his marriage and family life, his first contract with the American Army after World War II, how all of his companies burned down during the Korean War, how he rebuilt them from scratch, and what his plans were, now that he had achieved all the dreams of his youth.

"My plans? I don't have any, except asking you out for dinner tomorrow," HanChol said. "Meet me at Silla Hotel at seven P.M."

The reporter flushed brightly but gave him her phone number before walking out of the office, her high-waisted trousers riding up her firm, heart-shaped ass. When the door closed, HanChol was tempted to masturbate—but he sighed and started reviewing the loan agreement for the construction of a new factory in SongDo.

There was a knock on the door; it was his chief of staff.

"I beg your pardon, some old lady is here to see you without an appointment. I tried to turn her away but she says that you know each other from long ago."

HanChol looked up from his documents. There really wasn't much time to entertain distant relatives and hangers-on. But if it happened to be some estranged aunt, he would send her away with a little money.

"Bring her in," he said with a sigh.

A moment later, the door opened again and his heart started pounding as he recognized her familiar form. Her hair pulled back into a bun was a slate gray, and her narrow forehead was deeply creased. Her lips, which had once been so ripe and voluptuous, were now thin and shriveled. But her eyes still looked the same with their peculiar brightness, and her silhouette with its unusually erect posture was as graceful as he remembered. He found it hard to breathe.

"Jade," he called out softly. Not knowing what else to do, he walked over and held her hands in his own. She was quietly processing him in turn. His arms, shoulders, and chest had leaned out while his stomach had become round and soft. His hairline had receded an inch, and his skin had the muddy bronze tint of old men. But what she had most liked about him, his smile, had remained the same.

"I'm sorry to barge in on you like this." Her voice trembled.

"How in the world did you find me?"

"The phone book." She let his hands drop and cast her chin down, as though ashamed.

"Hey, hey—I'm so glad you came. Please sit down," HanChol said to her, then ordered his chief of staff to bring coffee. They talked softly about the weather and the coldness of this winter until the

aide reappeared with two cups of hot coffee and a plate of cream roll cake.

"So, how have you been all this time?" HanChol asked.

"I've been well, in my own way. Since independence I've been teaching at Koryo Arts School for Girls. It's been good—although every year, fewer girls choose to specialize in traditional dance. But I'm grateful to have the job."

"And what about marriage—family?"

Jade shook her head in embarrassment. This was a particular humiliation that she hadn't foreseen. "I don't mind that I never got married. But I wish I could've had children," she said simply and honestly.

HanChol felt sorry for her and didn't know what he could say that wouldn't sound obnoxious. He replied, "Yes, I understand."

"And you? I read about you all the time in newspapers and magazines. I even saw you on TV once! It seems everything has gone for you in the best way possible."

"I've had ups and downs like everyone else, but it turned out okay for me."

"And what about kids?"

"I have three boys, two girls. The oldest is a third year in college, and the youngest is just twelve."

Jade smiled. "How can anyone not be envious of your life? I always said you will be the most successful man in Seoul, and you've surpassed my prediction."

"Jade—" HanChol took a small sip of his coffee. "You know, I owe a lot to you."

It was Jade's turn to sip on her coffee, which was really to hide how her eyes had suddenly filled with tears. "Yes, I know," she croaked unevenly behind her cup.

HanChol reached over and touched her arm gently. She put her cup down on the saucer and sponged the corners of her eyes with a finger, carefully avoiding her eye makeup.

"I'm so sorry about how I hurt you," he said.

"That night when you came over for the last time," Jade began shakily. "Aunt Dani passed away. I almost died of guilt, but then it

was the war, so maybe I was just dying of hunger. How I survived that, I don't know exactly."

HanChol withdrew his hand from her and looked down at his lap in silence.

"I'm truly, truly sorry," he said at last. "I wish that there was something I could do to beg your forgiveness . . ." Without looking up, he sensed she was now crying openly by the sound of her sharp breathing.

"There is something you can do for me," she managed to say between hiccups.

"I'll do anything."

"Do you remember Mr. Nam JungHo? He helped me with a lot of things when we were young. If I needed anything, he was always there," Jade said. HanChol remembered the man—short, wiry, a bit savage and uncouth. There was an incident during the war when JungHo rudely offered him free food in front of all his cronies, just to show who had the upper hand. But HanChol didn't hate or even scorn him, having never given him too much thought.

"Before Aunt Dani died, JungHo used to come by with sacks of rice when no one had anything to eat, and he helped me find Lotus after she went missing. He's been arrested," Jade continued.

"On what charges?" HanChol asked, though he more or less already guessed at the answer.

"Espionage, Communist activity. He was a member of the Communist Party a long time ago, but I doubt that he's a spy for the North. You know it's not about what he actually believes or commits . . . This is just an excuse to get rid of any opposition. I know JungHo is innocent. I've never met any other man with such a good heart. You have connections to the regime—couldn't you put in a word?"

"What you're asking—it's very difficult. Even if I speak on his behalf, there's no guarantee that it will work. President Park has his own way of doing things. You understand that, don't you?"

"I know it will be difficult. All I'm asking is that you try," Jade said.

"Okay, I promise I'll put in a word."

When Jade got up to leave, HanChol rose with her. "Don't leave—stay with me," he wanted to say; the words were almost caught up in his throat.

"I hope I'll see you again," he said instead. "I once told you I wouldn't feel for anyone else the way I did for you . . . It turned out to be true."

"Ah, HanChol, me too." She reached over and squeezed his hand one last time. A hot tear rolled off and landed with a splash on his wrist. "Me too, a thousand times."

\* \* \*

**IN JAIL, JUNGHO HAD BEEN** having peculiarly vivid dreams. In one, he was walking in the mountains when a tiger approached him and knelt down. He climbed up on its back and it went leaping over the blue hills, almost flying, shrouded in clouds. In another dream, he was crossing a beautiful, heatless desert. The sand was as fine as flour and sunset-pink, and the sky was a clear turquoise. He was looking for something—a well. Then, seamlessly as it always happens in dreams, the object of his search changed to Jade. Without warning the sand started pouring down from the sky like rain. It was painless, nothing got inside his eyes or nose, but he realized he would be buried if he didn't pick up his pace. He was running weightlessly in the sandstorm when he woke up, drenched in sweat.

The morning after that dream, he woke up and ate a bowl of murky porridge that was slid underneath his door. There were a notepad and a pencil among the few things that he was permitted to have in his cell, so he began practicing writing. Even though he'd campaigned and was elected as the representative of his district, JungHo still had trouble with his letters. MyungBo had once said that he wrote to his son from prison; JungHo had two sons, and wished he could say something to them as well. So far, he'd only managed to fill a whole page with the blocky characters of his own name. Then there was a sound of footsteps clanking along the hallway and the sliding of the peephole.

"You have a visitor," the guard announced.

"*Yeobo?*" JungHo started to say. His wife hadn't been to see him yet, but he supposed that she'd been tied up with the children.

"Turn around and put your hands together."

JungHo turned around and gathered his wrists behind his back, and felt the handcuffs clasp around them. He was led through the hallway and into an empty room, where he was uncuffed. There was a wooden table and two chairs in the middle of the room. JungHo sat down, folded his arms over the table, and buried his head low. He was overcome with fatigue and he was not such a young man as to keep his head stiffly up out of pride.

"JungHo," someone called out.

He looked up in disbelief. His eyes came into focus and took in the figure of Jade, both completely familiar and strange at the same time.

"Jade," he managed to say, still reeling from dizziness. "Is it really you?"

Jade nodded, sat down across from him, and held on to his hand. "How are you feeling?"

"I've missed you. It's so good to see you," he said shakily. He had so much to tell her, but now his mind drew a blank and all he could do was squeeze her hand.

"It's good to see you too. I always regretted what I said before you went to Shanghai. Please forgive me," Jade said, looking into his eyes. She'd always been this way, candid and kind—he remembered with a rush of fondness.

"No, that was my fault. I shouldn't have pressured you." JungHo felt like being direct with her because there wasn't much time left anyway.

"You know, you've been my truest friend and the best person I've known in my life." Jade tried to sound uplifting instead of sad. "I went to ask HanChol to put in a word for you. He's extremely well connected with the regime and the military. He'll do the best he can for my sake."

"Thank you—it means the world to me that you wanted to help me. I just don't know if it's possible . . ." He paused. Jade started to

protest, but he shook his head and continued. "I had a dream last night where I was crossing a desert. It was a beautiful place with fine, soft, pink sand and a clear blue sky. Then the sand started to fall from above, like rain. It first came up to my ankles and then my knees . . ."

Jade gazed into his face with her dark, still-lovely eyes.

"I was trying to run out of there when I woke up. And then it hit me later this morning. I was inside an hourglass." JungHo smiled so that many lines appeared on the loose skin of his cheeks, grizzled with gray hair.

"JungHo . . ." Jade began to say, but he shook his head.

"Given the odds, I should have died a long time ago. I'm not afraid of anything that may come to pass . . . The only thing is, I wish I'd done some things differently in my life. Only now that I'm nearing the end, do I finally see everything so clearly." JungHo wrapped both his hands around Jade's smaller ones.

"What do you mean?"

"I never told you about the story of my father and a tiger, did I?"

Jade shook her head.

"It's an astonishing story my father told me before he passed. As a child I didn't know what to make of it, but many years later I met someone who confirmed that my father's account was true.

"This was about fifty years ago in PyongAhn province. It was in the middle of winter and we didn't have anything to eat, so my father went hunting in the mountains with a bow and arrow. He was hoping to catch some rabbits or a deer, but started tracking what looked like a leopard's paw prints.

"So he followed the prints all the way to the deepest mountains, and it ended at a cliff. There he came face-to-face with the animal—but it turned out to be a tigerling rather than a leopard. If he'd shot and killed it, we would have had enough to eat for a year at least. But he just turned around and started walking down the mountain. It started to snow, and he was already close to starvation. Finally, he fell down, thinking he would not get back up.

"He was nearly frozen to death, when a Japanese officer found him and revived him—this officer was the one who corroborated the

next part of the story, when I met him by sheer chance decades later. He described my father perfectly and said I looked like him.

"As my father and the officer were making their descent, they realized that a tiger was following them. A gigantic one, judging by its footprint. All of a sudden, it came leaping out of nowhere, ready to attack. But my father drove it away just by shouting—it saw him, turned around, and ran back into the woods. A tiger like that should have killed my father with one jump."

"Why did it not want to hurt your father?"

"My father always thought the tiger was my mother, reborn."

JungHo looked into Jade's eyes, her only feature that still looked the same as when they were both young. He ached to discover that even inside the hourglass there was something untouched by time.

"I don't know if that's true—it's just what he believed, that she loved him so much that even in another life she wanted to protect him. Because, Jade, everything is *inyeon* in this world. It's true what they say, even brushing the hem of one's coat on the streets is *inyeon*. But the most important *inyeon* of all is that between husband and wife. That's what I regret . . . that I didn't get to be with you." JungHo smiled sadly. With everything they both knew, and experienced together and apart, he was no longer afraid of putting her off with this truest statement of his life.

"I'm sorry . . . I regret it too," Jade said, wiping at her stinging nose.

"If I were to come back in another life, I would find you and marry you. Even if I don't come back, and I'm stuck somewhere in the eternal twilight . . . or heaven or hell . . . I will float around, looking for you." JungHo laughed quietly.

"If you ask me again, I will say yes. I promise," she said. Drops of tears were turning into streams along her cheeks.

"Wait, hold on." JungHo let go of her hands and started fumbling with his pant pockets. "I want to give you something."

He held out something small in his hand. It was a silver ring of the rounded, *garakji* type.

"How ever did you keep this in here?" Jade whispered.

"Hidden inside my waistband."



"It looks exactly like a ring my foster mother used to have, back in Pyongyang. Since then I've never seen another one like this. Where did you get it?"

"My father gave this to me before he passed away. It must have belonged to my mother . . . He loved her very much. Here, give me your hand."

JungHo slid the ring on her once-slim, now knobby finger.

"It's beautiful. Thank you," she said between sobs. "Do you know, this is the only ring I've ever received. I always wanted one just like this."

"I only wish I could've given this to you a lot earlier. If I could go back, I would give you all the jewels in the world . . ." he said, looking away behind her ear so that he wouldn't cry, so he wouldn't burden her with his tears.

# 27

## The Walk

1964

**THE NEXT MORNING, JUNGHO WAS WOKEN UP BY HIS GUARD, WHO** handcuffed him and led him to a door guarded by soldiers on either side. It was a dank room of concrete walls, and at the front there was a raised dais where a man in military uniform was writing something down on his notepad. He was one of those unremarkable, flat-featured men whose appearance is substantially improved by the addition of headgear, which was for him a camouflage cap. To his right, there was a secretary in front of a typewriter; to his left, there was an empty wooden chair. In the center of the room stood a stool, which was casting multiple faint shadows from the bare bulbs hanging on either side of the room. JungHo took his seat and looked stolidly at his interlocutor.

"Nam JungHo, you're here on charges of treason, espionage, collusion with the enemy, and antipatriotic beliefs. How do you plead?" the man in camouflage asked.

"Not guilty," JungHo said hoarsely.

"Listen, Nam JungHo. I read in the report that you were born in PyongAhn province. As was I—not sure if you can hear it in my

accent," the man continued, stabbing his pen into his notepad several times for emphasis.

"I also read that you have two sons. One's fourteen, and the youngest is just ten. Wonderful age. I have children too, myself. So be very careful how you respond . . . I don't like tearing up a young family, but I have to do my duty to the country, and the case is stacked against you completely.

"If you plead guilty, you'll get sentenced to twenty-five years. But if you behave in prison, renounce your antipatriotic beliefs, and prove your reformation, you'll go on parole. You could be a free man after—say, ten years, max. If President Park feels up to it, you may even get out after five. At that point, your youngest will still only be fifteen. You'd be able to raise your family." The camouflaged man had the manner of explaining something patiently to a child. JungHo glared at his face.

"If you deny the charges, I can't guarantee any such leniency. You may never see your family again. Why be so foolish?"

"I never had any contact with anyone in North Korea."

"Nam JungHo, you have an extensive and widely acknowledged history of Communist and antipatriotic activity all your life. You were a follower of Lee MyungBo, the one-time head of the Koryo Communist Party. Do you want to end up like him?"

"I renounced all ties with him back in 1948 when he went to trial. I've been absolved of all of that." JungHo closed his eyes at the mention of MyungBo's name. In his mind, his mentor's gentle face flashed like a beacon and then vanished, leaving him alone in the darkness of shame.

"It's not so simple, Nam JungHo. You weren't just a follower—it seems you were almost a foster son to him. He personally taught you how to read and write. You lived in his guesthouse for years."

JungHo looked down at his knees, not understanding how the man in camouflage could know so much of such ancient history. Not even his wife knew how closely he was tied to MyungBo.

"Bring in the witness," the interlocutor said to his secretary, who stopped typing and opened a side door. Harsh light streamed in from this opening, so that it scattered the intricate pattern made by the

two bare lightbulbs in the room. JungHo saw a new shadow in the shape of a manlike creature appear against the wall, behind the interlocutor, before the door closed and it faded away into darkness.

A thin old man had slinked into the room and was seated on the empty wooden chair. JungHo could make out just the slender spine and the narrow eyes shaped like sideways commas. Then he realized with a distant, dreamlike horror that it was his old friend Loach.

"Hwang InSoo, also known as Loach—when did you first come to know the defendant?" the interlocutor asked.

"I was twelve . . . So 1918," Loach answered, not looking at JungHo.

"The defendant lived on the streets, panhandling and stealing, until he became old enough to use his gang and rip money off the neighborhood businesses, correct?"

"That's correct."

"What happened after that?"

Loach cleared his throat dryly. "He met Lee MyungBo and became one of his Red cronies."

"*You* took me to him," JungHo interjected in disbelief, but Loach still resolutely avoided his eyes.

"Is that true? You left that part out in your earlier testimony." The interlocutor frowned in displeasure.

"No, it was JungHo who took me. I followed him, that's true—but why would I lead him anywhere? He was the chief, that was his title," Loach said calmly.

"So what happened then?"

"JungHo quickly became MyungBo's favorite, his right-hand man. They went to a lot of meetings together . . . My heart wasn't in it, so I dropped out. But JungHo was absorbed right into the Communist Party. He did everything MyungBo asked him to do, and went to Shanghai for some years. We lost touch during that time."

"When was he in Shanghai?"

"He left around 1941 . . . I'm not sure when he came back, he didn't let me know."

"It's possible, then, that he made contacts with the Chinese Communist Party during that time? The Chinese who invaded South

Korea alongside Kim Il-Sung less than ten years later?" The interlocutor raised his voice with the excitement of a game show host.

"Yes," the witness affirmed.

"Why are you doing this, Loach?" JungHo cried out. Upon hearing that nickname, Loach finally stole a glance at his old friend.

"I do what I need to do." He breathed out the words so quickly and quietly that they were almost unintelligible to JungHo. The interlocutor acted as though he hadn't heard.

"Nam JungHo, we searched your house and have the proof of your antipatriotic activity after you came back from Shanghai in 1945." The interlocutor opened a portfolio and pulled out a yellow sheet of paper. He carefully unfolded it and began reading in Japanese. "The bearer of this document, Nam JungHo, is on a special mission assigned by General Yamada Genzo, the Commander of the Fifth Army. Do not impede his mission and grant him safe passage. *Tenno heika banzai*. Signed, Yamada Genzo, June \_\_ 1945."

The interlocutor had a very fine pronunciation that hinted at Japanese military academy training; the parabolic fall of his sentences made clear how keenly he savored reading in that language.

"And this—a memento from Yamada, it seems." He held up something small and rectangular. It had turned sooty gray over time, but it was unmistakably the silver cigarette case.

\* \* \*

**JADE WAS WALKING HOME AFTER** finishing the last day of school. She had a month and a half of winter break and was buoyed by a sense of relief and possibilities. She allowed herself to think back to the meeting with HanChol just as a writer dips her pen in ink—with habitual pleasure.

At the time, she hadn't had a chance to dwell on her emotions. As always happens with significant events, the feelings developed fully and took on new colors and scents as she relived the scene in

her mind. She now saw that she hadn't been angry at him in his presence, even over Dani's passing. She was more surprised to discover that she wanted to see him again, to talk to him about the different paths that they had taken. It was hard to believe that they had once walked the same path, enough for her to have imagined that they might one day marry.

She took a turn onto a boulevard in Jongno. She wanted to stop by Café Seahorn for coffee, as she sometimes did by herself. The café was now a quiet place that strictly played music from before the Korean War. The red-leather booths were cracked and peeling, the umbrella stand was filled with canes, and the have-been patrons murmured in heated tones about art that had fallen out of fashion twenty or so years ago. They had a habit of quarrelling among themselves over misremembered history or perceived slights, but quickly forgetting or pretending to forget. There were so few of them left after two wars and countless struggles in between, that it wasn't easy to end relationships even with one's enemies.

The poet-owner was still there, and though his head was now gray he was the thing that had changed the least from Jade's younger days. He wore the same round spectacles and a well-pressed white shirt, and never noticed his clientele's aging or their star waning. He never married or had children, and people no longer bothered to spread rumors about why. Even his acquaintance with Jade had never deepened to friendship, and she was perfectly happy with that. When she walked in he always chatted amicably for just one minute and then left her alone.

Jade was startled out of her reverie by a crowd lining the boulevard on either side. She was annoyed; she'd wanted to walk in peace and quiet to her café. As she started to weave her way out toward a side street, people started shouting and jeering.

"Bastards! Sons of bitches!" they cried out.

Jade turned around and saw a line of about a dozen men, wrists bound and roped together like a string of dried croaker fish. Each man had a large placard hanging over his neck. I AM A THIEF AND I DESERVE PUNISHMENT read one sign. I SLEPT WITH MY FATHER'S WIFE

read another. Not merely satisfied with booing, some people started picking up stones and throwing them at the men.

Jade nearly screamed out loud when she saw JungHo in the middle of the line. His sign, in a shaky, childlike handwriting, said: I AM A GANGSTER & A COMMUNIST & I DESERVE TO DIE.

"No! No!" Jade cried, pushing aside the waves of gleeful strangers. People hissed at her from all sides, but she made her way to the front and followed the train of men.

"JungHo!"

Somehow, above the din of the crowd, JungHo heard her and found her eyes. One side of his face was already purple and swollen, and the rocks still flew by him. One hit him in the back and some young men near Jade erupted in delighted whoops.

"Stop, you dogs!" Jade pushed the young man who was cheering the loudest.

"What the fuck? Old bitch," he muttered, not so loudly, and then disappeared into the crowd with his friends.

Jade met JungHo's eyes again. He gave her the tiniest shake of his head—*don't do anything*. Then he smiled, to let her know he was okay.

He was remembering at that moment the parade of courtesans, many years ago now. It was almost at this same spot he'd fallen for the beautiful young girl who threw a flower at his face—the first time he saw Jade. He had the delirious sensation that he'd been walking this road all this time; and all this time, she was there to meet him. He wanted to look at Jade again, but thought that might provoke her into doing something dangerous and heroic. He had to look away, even though it pained him not being able to say to her, I love you. The rope was tugged, another rock hit him in the ear, and the jeer of the crowd faded away. He began to walk again, one footstep at a time, toward wherever the road ended.

## Epilogue

# The Seawoman

1965

**AFTER THE EXECUTION, I COULDN'T BEAR TO STAY IN SEOUL. I RESIGNED** from the school, came home, and packed all my things. I gave away almost everything to the neighbors and some of my pupils. Then I went to the garden and dug up the diamond necklace and the celadon vase. Wrapped in silk and hidden in two nesting boxes, they still looked the same as when I had last seen them. It was only I who had changed.

I took the train to Busan, watching the landscape change out the window. When I got off the train, the sun was setting in the harbor and a flock of seagulls landed noisily near my feet. Then I heard the ships blow their horns, just like the poet told me. I felt like I could breathe again for the first time since that day. But this still wasn't far enough from Seoul, and the next morning I got on a ship to Jeju.

Everything about Jeju is different from the mainland, starting from the sea. It is light turquoise near a sandy beach, and deepens to emerald-green and sapphire-blue farther from the shore. In some places where the black volcanic rock dashes off to a sudden bluff, the indigo waves look like they're reflecting the night sky even when it's sunny and bright. In midwinter the camellia trees with their glossy green leaves were in full bloom, and when the wind blew,



their red flowers fell on the black cliffs or tumbled into the sea. The air smelled of salt and ripe tangerines.

Hesoon used to say that Jejudo is the most beautiful place in the world. I haven't seen much of the world to truly know, but she may have been right.

I found an empty hut by the sea. There were a lot of abandoned houses in Jejudo after the unrest and the cholera in the 1940s and 1950s. No one in the village was happy to see me, but no one told me to get out, either. The island people are wary of mainlanders. None of them spoke standard Korean, and I didn't understand them when they whispered and giggled in front of my face.

**THE FIRST THING I DID** was scatter the ashes. If I had a way to find Hesoon's family, I would have tried—but I was just a child when we met, and I didn't even know her last name. I took them to the top of a cliff near my house and the wind carried them to the sea. "Do you like it here? Isn't it beautiful, Aunt Dani? Are you happy to be back, Hesoon?" No one answered, except for the howling of the wind.

**FROM THE CLIFF, I COULD** look down and see a cove where the seawomen got changed and rested between dives. After several days of hesitating, I finally went down there. The descent itself sent my head spinning and my legs shaking.

"I would like to learn how to dive," I said to the women, not sure any of them would understand. They talked among themselves in their dialect, laughed a little, and went back to drying themselves over a fire. One of them was nursing a baby, and another one was sharing her tangerines with her mates. They seemed to think I would leave eventually. I turned around, dismayed at the thought of the climb back up to the top.

"What's a mainlander like you doing here?" I heard a voice behind my back and turned around. She was in a pair of black linen diving pants, yet under her white chemise she was heavily pregnant. She was speaking in the thick, lilting Jeolla dialect.

"I was hoping I could become a seawoman," I said.

She laughed heartily. "I never heard such a thing. Auntie, this isn't something you can learn at this age. People drown in these waters. Go take care of yourself, Auntie."

**I HAD MORE THAN ENOUGH** money after selling the house in Seoul. I didn't have anything to do except walk around all day. One morning I wandered out toward the snowcapped Halla Mountain, which is visible from my part of the island. I thought it would be much closer, but after walking many hours, I was still so far from it. Finally I had to admit that I was lost, and foolish to try to get there without any directions. Somehow I made it back on the path to the village, which I recognized from some familiar trees and shrubs. That's when I heard the moaning and the screams, coming from a fenced-in hut nearby.

I ran inside and found a woman in labor. It was the same seawoman who had told me to go back home. There was no one in the neighborhood; all the men were out at sea on their boats, and all the women were diving.

I tried to remember what the midwife had done with Luna. If it had been a difficult birth, I'm sure I wouldn't have helped. But the woman was young and healthy, and so was the baby. All I really had to do was cut the cord, tie the end, bathe the baby, and put him in his mother's arm.

**WATCHING THE SEA MAKES YOU** think of things. I spent whole days by the beach, my knees tucked in front of my chest, reminiscing. And a few times at first, I cried thinking of JungHo, the last smile he gave me even as he was being stoned and paraded. But the more I stared at the infinite blue waves, the more my mind was pulled toward the happy memories. Truthfully, it is hard for me to remember in great detail all the terrible things that have happened, save for some images.

I remembered that when HanChol and I broke up, I didn't cry in bed before falling asleep. But I wept so bitterly in my dreams that night that I startled myself awake, and realized my eyes were wet. Nonetheless, I can't remember what we said to each other that last

evening—or how exactly he broke my heart. What I can still see with great clarity are only the beautiful parts. Dancing the waltz with Aunt Dani, Luna, and Lotus. The first time I went onstage at Joseon Theatre. Kissing HanChol under the moonlight. The way he looked at me. Being caressed by him. I have to admit—and it is embarrassing, even at this age—that it is HanChol who gave me the most to remember.

I feel sad and guilty about this, on account of JungHo.

**“WHY DO YOU SIT THERE** all day watching the sea, Auntie? Don’t you have anyone to look after?”

It was Jindo *daek* in her diving clothes. Because she was from Jindo on the mainland, everyone called her Jindo *daek* or CholSoo’s mom, after her baby.

“Where’s CholSoo, Jindo *daek*?” I asked her.

“I left him on a rock, over there in the cove.” She looked behind her shoulder.

“What? Leave a month-old baby on a rock by the sea?” I jumped up.

“Auntie, that’s what we seawomen do. If I don’t keep him nearby, how can I give him my breast when he’s hungry?” She rolled her eyes.

“I’m always on the beach anyway, why don’t you just let me watch him?”

“That’s why I came over here, isn’t it?” She smiled, already leading the way to the cove. CholSoo was mewling like a kitten inside a bowl-shaped black rock, about a yard up from the ground. His mother quickly opened her chemise and nursed him, and I noticed that there was a large bruise on her shoulder. I asked her about it.

“Oh, this is nothing. The waves were so strong,” she said.

**THE DAYS BECAME LONGER** and CholSoo turned from bright red to light beige. He was such a good-natured little baby. I sat alone in the cove with CholSoo, shielded from the sea spray, the wind, and the sun. The other women came back periodically to empty their

bags of abalones and eat a bite of food before heading back out. They were divided by rank and could dive only in their respective areas. CholSoo's mom only went out to the shallow waters by the shore, and when she came back her bag was usually a lot lighter than the others'.

**ONE NIGHT I FOUND IT** hard to sleep. It was the sound of the waves crashing. As soon as the sky began to lighten, I went for a walk. The sun was just below the sea and the world was awash in orange and pink.

My feet led me to the cliff, and standing there amid the fluttering new grass was a pair of chestnut-colored wild horses. They stared at me for a long time with such calm eyes.

**"COME NOW,** if you really want to dive, I'll show you," Jindo *daek* said to me, throwing me a pair of diving pants and a white linen chemise.

"What about CholSoo?" I asked.

"He'll be fine. I just fed him and we won't be out long."

I quickly changed into the diver's outfit and put on the circular goggle over my head. She didn't give me a bag, a knife, and a buoy, because I wouldn't even try to dive deep or catch an abalone for months at least.

The water was warmer than I thought. All I learned that day was how to float in the water without sinking. For hours I bobbed in the shallow, turquoise water, the waves carrying me back and forth, rocking me the way I rock CholSoo to sleep.

**I FINALLY GAINED SOME RESPECT** within the hamlet after I bought a black-and-white television from the mayor of the neighboring town. No one had ever owned a TV in this village, and almost every evening people came over to my house to watch the news—never mind that they barely understood what was being said. Every so often, the screen turned to static and I had to get up and hammer the side of the TV to get it working again. They were even delighted

by that. The women started calling me Seoul *halmang*—Seoul granny.

**AFTER MONTHS OF BOBBING** and doggy-paddling, I was finally allowed to hold my breath and sink down to the sea floor. It was only a little deeper than my height but panic gripped me and I came back to the surface, coughing and gasping. Jindo *daek* gave me her arm so I could hold on to it and regain my breath. I couldn't help but notice that her arm was covered in bruises. Every day her bruises became bigger.

"It's nothing," she said before I could question her.

"You could leave him and come live with me," I offered.

"Auntie, he would break down your entire house and drag me out by my hair," she said.

After some practice, I began collecting sea urchins and oysters near the shore. Instead of going to the cove to relax with the other women, I stayed in the sea and just floated. In the water, I felt the weight of the people I used to be falling down to the seafloor. I no longer felt like the same person who had had all those heartaches and regrets.

**ONE NIGHT**, the stiff-faced announcer reported that the last tiger to be captured in the wild had died in the ChangGyeong Palace Zoo. It had been discovered as an orphaned cub right after the end of the Korean War. Most scientists believe that the Siberian tiger is now officially extinct in the Korean peninsula. But one scientist who was interviewed said they may still exist in the Demilitarized Zone or the deepest mountains in the northeastern border of North Korea.

**I WOKE UP** to the sound of mewling outside my door and found CholSoo in a basket. His mom was nowhere to be found in the village, the cove, or the sea. By midday, the word had gotten around that she had left her baby with me and run away back to the mainland. Her husband, a red-faced captain of a fishing boat, soon came lumbering into my house, reeking of alcohol.

"Where's that whore! I will break her in half this time. And where's my son?"

"Jindo *daek* is not here, and I don't know where she is. But it looks like she wanted me to take care of CholSoo," I said as calmly as possible.

"You stupid wench, give me my son back!" He bared his teeth.

"I'm old enough to be your mother, watch your tongue," I snapped. "Do you even know anything about raising an infant? Fine, take him, if you want to see your own flesh and blood starve to death. Because of your stupidity and stubbornness, you're going to kill this innocent baby. Just like you beat up the mother of your own child." I walked into the room and fetched CholSoo in his swaddling clothes.

"Here, take him if you have any idea how to feed and clothe him."

As soon as the man leaned in, the baby started wailing. His father flinched, and I imagined that he had beaten his wife whenever she couldn't quiet the baby quickly enough.

"I can't stand that crying . . ." He grimaced.

"Go away now. If you want what's best for your child, go away in peace."

He turned on his heel and walked out of my gates.

**CHOLSOO WAS A GOOD BABY.** There were four nursing women in the hamlet and they took turns nursing him once a day. I paid them generously for their milk. For the other meals, I fed CholSoo a gruel made of ground-up rice. He always smiled when I came to pick him up; the top of his head smelled like milk and bread. When I heard his soft breathing at night, I didn't feel lonely anymore. I no longer felt the need to take a walk before sunrise.

**IT WAS EARLY SUMMER** and the hills and cliffs were covered in pink rhododendron. Something I discovered also is that in Jejudo, the cosmoses bloom even in spring and summer. The sight of wildflowers and the sea made my heart hurt. That was why I sought out the water.

I took the baby to the cove with me and laid him in the bowl-shaped rock. The other women were already hundreds of yards out from the shore. I waded out alone to the shallows with my tools.

The water was so clear that I could see the colorful little fish from above the surface. One orange fish with white stripes, the size of my pinky, nibbled at my toe and then swam away quickly.

I put on my goggle, took a deep breath, and sank down. The rocks looked promising with their corals, sea anemone, and starfish, but I could only hold my breath for so long. I dove several times before picking up a single sea urchin. Maybe an hour had passed but I was already out of breath and worried about the baby.

I sank down for just one more dive before heading back to the cove. That's when I saw an abalone wedged on a rock, a few yards away from me. I resisted the urge to come up for air and kicked my feet toward the bottom. I slipped my knife under the abalone and sawed it off the rock.

My head broke the surface and I gasped for air, delirious at the sun shining incandescently above the cliff. By the time I came back to the cove, the other women had already left with their morning catches. The best divers caught about twenty abalones a day, and I had only just caught my first one. CholSoo whimpered in his cradle, and I picked him up and rocked him side to side.

After I fed CholSoo his gruel, I sat down on a rock and held up the abalone. Its shell was covered in a thin layer of green seaweed and didn't look particularly appetizing. But I'd seen the seawomen snack on raw abalone many times. I flipped it to its naked underside. When I lifted it up out of its shell, my knife ran into something hard in the slimy flesh. Round, lumbent. It was a pearl, glowing pink and gray like a morning moon in my palm.

I stared at it for a long time and I just knew that JungHo was still watching over me. Even from the other side. And I will be the same way, letting go and holding on continuously until only the sea parts of me remain.

Life is only bearable because time makes you forget everything. But life is worthwhile because love makes you remember everything.

I tucked the pearl away in my clothes bag and walked out to the water. I floated weightlessly in the cool azure waves, looking up at the cloudless blue sky. For the first time in my life I felt no wish or yearning for anything. I was finally one with the sea.



# Acknowledgments

This book would not exist without Jody Kahn of Brandt & Hochman, whose integrity, intelligence, and literary stewardship have guided me from the very beginning. An agent extraordinaire and a class act, Jody is one of the great *inyeons* of my life.

After meeting the world's best agent, I somehow lucked out equally in meeting Sara Birmingham as my editor. Her editing was an art in and of itself, and her courage in taking this on made me want to meet her brilliance at least halfway. My deepest thanks go to Sara, amazing editorial assistant TJ Calhoun, and the dream team at Ecco (especially Allison Saltzman for the mythic jacket, Shelly Perron for the awe-inspiring copyediting, and Caitlin Mulrooney-Lyski for the tireless championing). They made this the best book that it could be.

I am grateful to editors of literary journals and magazines who have shown faith in me over the years, especially Luke Neima of *Granta*, who published my first short story, "Body Language," and later, my first translation. I was proud to publish an excerpt of this book in *Shenandoah*, thanks to the warm support of the incredible Beth Staples. Thank you to everyone at Bread Loaf Environmental Writers' Conference, Regional Arts & Culture Commission, and the Virginia C. Piper Writing Center at Arizona State University, especially Ashley Wilkins for her patience and warmth. Olivia Chen, Hilary Leathem, and James Gruett read drafts and provided keen insights that turned the book from a mere cub to a full-grown beast. My Princeton women authors—especially Keija Parssinen, Alexis Schaitkin, Clare Beams, Eva Hagberg, Kate McQuade, and Amanda

Dennis—I've received so much wisdom, joy, and camaraderie from our chats.

More *inyeons* who have touched my life and played a part in turning *Beasts* into a reality: Thank you, Edgard Beckand, for giving me everlasting confidence. Thank you, Max Staedtler, for giving me resolve—I wouldn't have become a writer without you. Thank you Arron Lloyd for giving me optimism. I didn't know it then, but that day when we went running in Fort Tryon Park in a snowstorm was a turning point for the rest of my life. Mareza Larizadeh, your friendship and mentorship mean the world to me. Thank you, Elise Anderson, for the loyalty, bon mots, and memories—the fact that you remember what I remember is one of the miracles of life. Renee Serell, my oldest friend: like the friends in this book, our lives were always meant to be shared.

My warmest gratitude and love go to Mary Hood Luttrell and the rest of my Peaceful Dumpling family. Mary read some of the earliest chapters of the book, and was always just a text away from answering any literary quandary. Support and love from Crystal Chin, Lindsay Frederick, Iga Kazmierczak, Lauren Sacerdote, Imola Toth, Nea Pantry, Kat Kennedy, Lana Stafford, Ema Melanaphy, and other Peaceful Dumpling editors and readers sustained me while writing this book.

I am grateful to Wildlife Conservation Society Russia and the Phoenix Fund for their decades of tirelessly protecting the endangered Siberian tigers and Amur leopards in the Russian Far East. Thank you for allowing me to contribute a portion of the proceeds from this book to your conservation efforts. I'd also like to acknowledge early twentieth-century writers and artists from different countries and ideologies; researching their works was essential to bringing this time and place to the present.

This book isn't meant to declare the triumph of one ideology or country over another, but to reflect and uphold our shared humanity. Suffering knows no borders, and all people deserve and yearn for peace. One day while writing this book, I was passing by Columbus Circle when I saw Japanese activists holding up signs against nuclear weapons. They looked as though they were within a generation of

the bombings, yet they were smiling gently. Thank you for the paper crane—the symbol of peace.

My mother, Inja Kim, provided me with her favorite book on literary theory (edited by Kim Hyun), discussions on Korean linguistics and literature, and history lessons—both of the country and of our family. Her stories of her father, Kim TaeHee, his golden-brown eyes, and his mysterious trips to Shanghai during the colonial period became the inspiration for this novel. My father, Hackmoo Kim, mailed me books from Portland to New York, and always picked up any tomes that he thought I might find even slightly inspiring or interesting. But my parents helped write this book long before I even knew I was going to be a writer, passing down their love of the arts and nature, and teaching me how to live as an artist and as a human being. They believed in me before I had any belief in myself. I owe them everything.

And, finally, to David Shaw, the great *inyeon* of my life. We met before we even met, which is how I know everything I wrote in this novel is true.

## About the Author

**JUHEA KIM** was born in Incheon, Korea, and moved to Portland, Oregon, at age nine. Her writing has been published in *Granta*, *Guernica*, *Catapult*, *ZYZZYVA*, and other outlets. She is the founder and editor of *Peaceful Dumpling*, an online magazine at the intersection of sustainable lifestyle and ecological literature. She earned her BA in art and archaeology from Princeton University. *Beasts of a Little Land*, her debut novel, will be translated and published around the world. After a decade in New York City, Kim now lives with her two rescue cats in Portland, Oregon.

Discover great authors, exclusive offers, and more at [hc.com](http://hc.com).

The logo for Bookperk, featuring the word "Bookperk" in a sans-serif font. The word "Book" is in yellow and "perk" is in white. The logo is centered within a large, faint, light-gray circle on a solid black rectangular background.

# Bookperk

[Sign up for Bookperk](#) and get e-book bargains, sneak peeks, special offers, and more—delivered straight to your inbox.

**SIGN UP NOW**

# Copyright

This is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously and are not to be construed as real. Any resemblance to actual events, locales, organizations, or persons, living or dead, is entirely coincidental.

BEASTS OF A LITTLE LAND. Copyright © 2021 by Juhea Kim. All rights reserved under International and Pan-American Copyright Conventions. By payment of the required fees, you have been granted the nonexclusive, nontransferable right to access and read the text of this e-book on-screen. No part of this text may be reproduced, transmitted, downloaded, decompiled, reverse-engineered, or stored in or introduced into any information storage and retrieval system, in any form or by any means, whether electronic or mechanical, now known or hereafter invented, without the express written permission of HarperCollins e-books.

*Cover design by Allison Saltzman*

*Cover art: tiger © Jasmijn Solange Evans, landscape courtesy of the National Palace Museum of Korea*

*Title page art by Sergey Pekar and khan3145 / Shutterstock, Inc.*

Ecco® and HarperCollins® are trademarks of HarperCollins Publishers.

FIRST EDITION

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication

Names: Kim, Juhea, author.

Title: Beasts of a little land: a novel / Juhea Kim.

Identifiers: LCCN 2021002241 (print) | LCCN 2021002242 (ebook) | ISBN 9780063093577 (hardcover) | ISBN 9780063093591 (ebook)

Subjects: LCSH: Courtesans—Fiction. | Korean resistance movements, 1905–1945—Fiction. | GSAFD: Historical fiction. | Love stories.

Classification: LCC PS3611.I454535 B43 2021 (print) | LCC PS3611.I454535 (ebook) | DDC 813/.6—dc23

LC record available at <https://lcn.loc.gov/2021002241>

LC ebook record available at <https://lcn.loc.gov/2021002242>

Digital Edition DECEMBER 2021 ISBN: 978-0-06-309359-1

Version 10152021

Print ISBN: 978-0-06-309357-7

# About the Publisher

## **Australia**

HarperCollins Publishers Australia Pty. Ltd.  
Level 13, 201 Elizabeth Street  
Sydney, NSW 2000, Australia  
[www.harpercollins.com.au](http://www.harpercollins.com.au)

## **Canada**

HarperCollins Publishers Ltd  
Bay Adelaide Centre, East Tower  
22 Adelaide Street West, 41st Floor  
Toronto, Ontario, M5H 4E3  
[www.harpercollins.ca](http://www.harpercollins.ca)

## **India**

HarperCollins India  
A 75, Sector 57  
Noida  
Uttar Pradesh 201 301  
[www.harpercollins.co.in](http://www.harpercollins.co.in)

## **New Zealand**

HarperCollins Publishers New Zealand  
Unit D1, 63 Apollo Drive  
Rosedale 0632  
Auckland, New Zealand



[www.harpercollins.co.nz](http://www.harpercollins.co.nz)

**United Kingdom**

HarperCollins Publishers Ltd.

1 London Bridge Street

London SE1 9GF, UK

[www.harpercollins.co.uk](http://www.harpercollins.co.uk)

**United States**

HarperCollins Publishers Inc.

195 Broadway

New York, NY 10007

[www.harpercollins.com](http://www.harpercollins.com)